This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

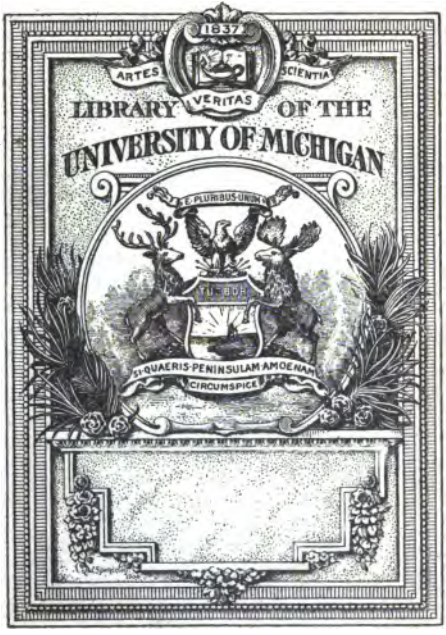
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`


1837
ARTES
SCIENTIA
VERITAS
LIBRARY OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
E PLURIBUS UNUM
SI QUAERIS PENINSULAM AMOENAM
CIRCUMSPICE

828
J7[illegible]c.
1783

CHRYSAL;

OR,

39109

THE ADVENTURES

OF

A GUINEA.

WHEREIN ARE EXHIBITED

VIEWS OF SEVERAL STRIKING SCENES,

WITH

CURIOUS AND INTERESTING ANECDOTES

OF THE

MOST NOTED PERSONS IN EVERY RANK OF LIFE,

WHOSE HANDS IT PASSED THROUGH,

IN AMERICA, ENGLAND, HOLLAND, GERMANY, AND PORTUGAL.

BY AN ADEPT.

Chas. Johnston

—— Hold the Mirrour up to Nature,
To ſhow Vice its own Image, Virtue his own Likeneſs,
And the very Age and Body of the Times
His Form and Preſſure. SHAKSPEARE.

Qui capit, ille facit.

A NEW EDITION.

VOL. II.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR J. F. AND C. RIVINGTON; G. ROBINSON; T. CADELL; T. EVANS; AND R. BALDWIN.

M DCC LXXXIII.

CONTENTS of Vol. II.

BOOK THE FIRST.

CHAP. I.

SOME remarks on language. Character of CHRYSAL'*s new maſter.* CHRYSAL *attends his maſter's wife on a viſit to a ſuperior lady. Polite reception.* P. 1

CHAP. II.

A genteel evening. A dream, and a bet, and a family ſupper. Conjugal tenderneſs. The Biſhop's dejection at the death of the Doctor, and danger of the Archbiſhop is diverted by another dream. 6

CHAP. III.

A diſſertation on dreaming. The dream purſued to the aſtoniſhment, and almoſt converſion of the Biſhop's Lady. Her veracity in recounting ſome circumſtances relating to it. She and his Lordſhip perſuade each other to dream that it is true. 13

CHAP. IV.

Hiſtory of the dreamer. She loſes her wager, which ſhe pays with pleaſure. His Lordſhip waits upon her Grace. His knowledge of the world promotes a noble inſtance of charity. CHRYSAL *enters into the ſervice of her Grace.* 20

CHAP. V.

The Biſhop obtains the honour of a private audience. His extenſive charity. He makes her Grace his almoner, to relieve his fellow Proteſtants in

GERMANY. *He is ſtrangely affected at the news of the Archbiſhop's recovery. Her Grace's character.* 25

CHAP. VI.

The true uſe of court-favour. The Biter bitten. An eaſy way to obtain a fine feather for a fool's cap. The inſolence of office, in hindering an houſe to be built inſtead of a hen-coop; and ſpoiling her Grace's dairy. How to make the moſt of a common. A beau Lord beaten by a Bailiff, for walking in the fields in an undreſs. 29

CHAP. VII.

An odd viſitor to a lady. The myſtery of ſtock-jobbing. Charity begins at home. Her Grace's kind intentions for honeſt Aminadab. Another viſitor. The worth of honour. The beſt ſalve for a broken character. 37

CHAP. VIII.

The colonel puts the old ſoldier upon her Grace. Her rage and reſentment fall upon her agent. Her judicious application of the Biſhop's charity, with her tender concern for her friends abroad. 45

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice, for that of an uſual attendant upon the great. The hiſtory of the unfortunate glyſter-pipe maker, who was like to be hanged for dirtying his fingers. An humble imitation of high life. Another change brings* CHRYSAL *into the poſſeſſion of a perſon of an extraordinary character. Converſation between him and a very noted perſon. Let thoſe laugh that win.* 50

CHAP. X.

CHRYSAL's *maſter ſtarts at his own apparition. Interview between the Doctor and a noted ballad-ſinger*

ſinger. The hiſtory of a famous ballad. All trades alike. 58

CHAP. XI.

A venerable Matron completes the company. The curtain lifted up, and ſeveral unexpected diſcoveries made. MOMUS *plays ſucceſſively upon Doctor* HUNCH-BACK, *and Mother* BRIMSTONE. *After various diſaſters, the evening is concluded in character.* 63

CHAP. XII.

The Doctor pays a viſit to an uſeful friend. The myſtery of controverſy. He waits upon her Grace with a pious exhortation for her friend. CHRYSAL *enters into the ſervice of her Grace. Her diſappointment, in her viſit to the Priſon. Her Grace's character.* 76

CHAP. XIII.

Hiſtory of a lady of faſhion. Deſcription of a route. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice for that of a lady of enterpriſe. A bold ſtroke for a huſband.* 83

CHAP. XIV.

CHRYSAL, *by a natural progreſſion, comes into the poſſeſſion of a knight of the induſtry, who brings him to a horſe race, where he has an opportunity of ſeeing a noble jockey practiſe part of the myſterious ſcience of the turf, with other common occurrences.* 91

CHAP. XV.

CHRYSAL's *maſter pays his court to a great perſon, who ſeems not much to reliſh his humour, and expreſſes ſome unfaſhionable ſentiments concerning polite pleaſures. In the courſe of a regular circulation.* CHRYSAL *comes into the poſſeſſion of a miniſter of ſtate, who refuſes a friendly*

offer for very odd reaſons. His ſtrange notions of ſome affairs. 96

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL's *ſentiments of his maſter's maſter, who gives a remarkable reaſon for his approbation of his miniſter's meaſures and manner of doing buſineſs. The miniſter's charge to a general, on appointing him to a command.* CHRYSAL *enters into the ſervice of the general. Conflict between maternal tenderneſs and glory, in which the latter is triumphant. Strange advice from a mother to her ſon.* 102

CHAP. XVII.

Another ſcene of tenderneſs. Love and honour in the old faſhioned romantick ſtyle. CHRYSAL *quits the ſervice of the general, and, after ſome few common changes, enters into that of honeſt Aminadab. Concluſion of Aminadab's agency for her Grace.* 109

CHAP. XVIII.

They arrive at the HAGUE. *Political converſation between a* DUTCHMAN *and a* JEW. *They differ in opinion.* AMINADAB *leaves his friend* VAN HOGAN *in great diſtreſs.* 115

CHAP. XIX.

AMINADAB *bids adieu to her Grace, and ſails with his ſon for* AFRICA. CHRYSAL *remains with a* DUTCH *banker. The principles and conſcience of a good* DUTCHMAN. CHRYSAL *is ſent into* GERMANY. *His opinion of the* DUTCH. 124

CHAP. XX.

CHRYSAL's *remarks on military glory in his journey. Two ſtrange paſſengers taken into the boat.*

National

National prejudice and pride break out in perſons not likely to be ſuſpected of ſuch paſſions. 129

CHAP. XXI.

The hiſtory of the Bulgarian ſoldier. CHRYSAL *is carried to his deſtined maſter.* 136

CHAP. XXII.

How CHRYSAL *found his maſter employed. The grandeur and happineſs of abſolute power His cares for the augmentation and ſupport of his revenues. His rage at the inſolence of liberty, punctuality to his engagements, and reſolution to maintain the conſequence of his rank.* 143

CHAP. XXIII.

More cares of ſovereignty, and conſequences of grandeur. CHRYSAL *is ſent to market, where he is given to a Jew for bacon.* 150

CHAP. XXIV.

Compariſon between two dealers in fleſh. The celebration of the PASSOVER *in the traditional way, and the method of procuring (human) lambs explained.* 154

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

The rites are interrupted, and the victims changed. This cleared up without a miracle. The few ſurvivors of the firſt fury brought to publick juſtice. 159

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

A breach of neutrality properly resented brings CHRYSAL *into a service which he had long been ambitious of. How he found his new master employed. The King of Bulgaria's reception of the humbled magistrates. His appropriation of money to his own use. His reflexions on the sight of* CHRYSAL. 164

CHAP. III.

The King takes a view of his camp in disguise. The exalted pleasure he received in the various occurrences of his walk. He gains a great victory. His conduct in and after the battle. 169

CHAP. IV.

The happy fruits of victory. CHRYSAL *finds new reason to admire his master. A stranger throws himself at his feet, to implore justice. The story of the stranger.* 174

CHAP. V.

The King sends for the General, and orders the stranger to be confined till his arrival. Continuation of the story of the stranger. A new tryal of the King's fortitude and activity of soul. 180

CHAP. VI.

Conclusion of the story of the stranger. His wife arrives and acquits the general. The king's speech to him, and generosity to the strangers. CHRYSAL *changes his service, and goes with them. Some general remarks on the character of the king of* BULGARIA, *and the probable consequences of the war.* 186

CHAP. VII.

CHRYSAL *arrives at* VIENNA, *where he meets an old acquaintance. The hiſtory of his maſter's brother. His miſſion, labours, and ſucceſs in* ENGLAND. *He is ſent to* PERU. *He diſapproves of the precipitancy of the meaſures carried on there, and returns to* EUROPE, *to prepare matters better.* 192

CHAP. VIII.

Continuation of the Jeſuit's diſcourſe. He ſhows the promiſing ſituation of his affairs at preſent. The conciſe method by which SPAIN *and* PORTUGAL *are to be brought into the war with* ENGLAND. *He propoſes to his brother to join in the general, that he may accompliſh his particular deſign.* 197

CHAP. IX.

The Jeſuit proceeds to ſhow the riſe of the war in GERMANY, *and explains the motives of the ſeveral parties engaged in it, as alſo of the neutrality obſerved by ſome particular ſtates.* 201

CHAP. X.

Concluſion of the Jeſuit's diſcourſe. His ſyſtems of morality and religion. His brother yields to his arguments, with ſome particular exceptions. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.* 206

CHAP. XI.

CHRYSAL *propoſes a political ſcheme, that will never take place, to ſettle the peace of* GERMANY. *A ſhort view of the war between the* FRENCH *and* ENGLISH, *with the motives of the former for transferring the ſeat of it into* GERMANY. *Inſidious ambition meets a juſt diſappointment.* 210

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

A deep-laid ſcheme diſconcerted by an accidental victory. Treachery falls into the pit it had dug for another. The true way to ſatisfy ENGLISH *ſoldiers. The diſgraced commander's motives for appealing from the will of his ſovereign to a publick tryal. His hopes are again diſappointed, and he confirms his own ruin.* 219

CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAL *arrives at* BRUSSELS. *The great ſource of Jeſuitical influence. Anecdotes of a man of pleaſure and a lady of faſhion. Their hiſtory concluded in character.* 226

CHAP. XIV.

The confeſſor entertains CHRYSAL's *maſter with another not uncommon character. The modern method of repairing a broken fortune. The general conſequence of female ambition. A curious amour commenced in an odd manner, and carried on in as odd a place.* 232

CHAP. XV.

Continued. His lordſhip's ſcheme to fling his rival unluckily diſappointed. A diſagreeable meeting occaſions ſtrange diſcoveries. Woman never at a loſs. Law often ſpoils ſport. 237

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL's *maſter meets an old acquaintance, who relates the hiſtory of his life. Curious anecdotes of a* GREAT *man.* 244

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

Continued. He comes to ENGLAND, *where his ſervices are rejected by the ſtate, and he is obliged to exert his abilities in a lower ſphere. He gains the confidence of his landlord, from whom he borrows all he is worth, and then ſtrives to pay the debt with a halter. A good retreat is better than a bad ſtand.* 252

CHAP. XVIII.

Continued. He launches again into the troubled ocean of politicks, and ſuffers a ſecond ſhipwreck in ENGLAND. He that will not when he may, *&c.* ——— *It is often better to play a poor game than ſtand out.* CHRYSAL *arrives at* LISBON. 260

CHAP. XIX.

CHRYSAL *comes, at* LISBON, *into the poſſeſſion of a former acquaintance. His maſter makes the great attempt without ſucceſs. Several of the nobility are ſacrificed to other motives, on pretence of being guilty of this fact.* CHRYSAL'S *maſter is at length taken up, and he changes his ſervice.* 264

CHAP. XX.

CHRYSAL *meets another acquaintance at his new maſter's. Concluſion of the hiſtory of honeſt* AMINADAB. *Adventures of his ſon. He enters into buſineſs at* LISBON, *in which* CHRYSAL *ſuffers a great misfortune. His ingratitude to his uncle juſtly rewarded.* CHRYSAL *enters into a new ſervice.* 270

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XXI.

An uncommon criminal appears at the tribunal of the holy office. A love-ſcene in a ſtrange place. The hiſtory of PHERON *and* ILISSA. 277

CHAP. XXII.

The love-adventure continued. The inquiſitor viſits PHERON, *and obtains his conſent. He employs an* ENGLISH *ſailor, whom he ſets at liberty, to aſſiſt him in his deſigns.* 285

CHAP. XXIII.

The ſailor goes to LONDON, *buys a ſhip, and returns to* LISBON, *where he takes his paſſengers on board. His behaviour on meeting a* FRENCH *ſhip. He lands his paſſengers at* ALEXANDRIA, *returns home, and marries.* CHRYSAL *quits his ſervice.* 288

CHAP. XXIV.

CHRYSAL *arrives in* LONDON, *where he comes into the poſſeſſion of a pawn-broker, by whom he is given to the author. A moſt unhappy inſtance of human infirmity. The concluſion.* 297

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE ADVENTURES OF

A GUINEA.

BOOK THE FIRST.

CHAP. I.

Some remarks on language. Character of CHRYSAL*'s new maſter.* CHRYSAL *attends his maſter's wife on a viſit to a ſuperior lady. Polite reception.*

I HAVE often been apprehenſive that the manner in which I expreſs myſelf may lead you into ſome miſtakes of my meaning, the ſignification of words, in the language of men, being ſo unſettled, that it is ſcarce poſſible to convey a determinate ſenſe, without ſuch a periphraſis as would take up too much time in ſo complicated ſcenes as thoſe I deſcribe; for where different, or perhaps contrary, meanings are ſignified by the ſame word, how eaſy is it for a mind prone to error to take the wrong one!

For inſtance, the character of a good man may be thought to be as ſafe from miſapprehenſion, from the immutability of the virtues which conſtitute it, as any that can be attributed either by, or to human frailty: and yet how variouſly, how contradictorily, is it applied!

On the *Royal-Exchange*, he is a *good man* who is worth ten thouſand pounds, and pays his bills punctually, by whatever private and public frauds and injuſtice he has amaſſed that ſum, and maintains his credit. At the politer end of the world, *goodneſs* aſſumes another appearance, and is attributed to him who entertains his company well, pays his play-debts, and ſupports his honour with his ſword, though he is guilty of the baſeſt breaches of every civil and moral virtue, and lives in profeſſed violation of all laws human and divine: while, in the ſtrictneſs of truth, and propriety of expreſſion, no greater abuſe of words can be conceived, than that of proſtituting this character on either, except it were in compliance with the modern, modiſh way of ſpeaking by contraries.

I do not give this as the only inſtance: they are innumerable, and occur in every moment's converſation. The horſe that wins the match, goes *damn'd* faſt; as the one that loſes, goes *damn'd* ſlow. The weather in ſummer is *hell-fire* hot, in winter *hell-fire* cold.

Now, what ſenſe can the very *Devil* himſelf, to whom you refer all difficulties, make of ſuch contradictions? Though, indeed, theſe particular phraſes give him pleaſure, as they ſhow the inclination which men have to his empire, by making the very terrors of it familiar to their minds in their common converſation.

But

But I am not at leiſure to preſcribe rules for avoiding this confuſion, one of the moſt extenſive cauſes of human error. I ſhall only give you ſome cautions to prevent your falling into it, in reſpect to what I ſay to you.

You are to obſerve, then, that whenever I ſpeak in the perſon of another, I always would be underſtood in the ſenſe which that perſon would be underſtood in at that time, without any further regard to moral, or phyſical truth, or propriety of ſpeech. But, when I ſpeak my own ſentiments (which indeed I very rarely do) I ſhall always deliver them with perſpicuity and preciſion, as far as the jargon I am obliged to uſe will allow, and would have my words taken in the ſenſe uſually given to them, in the particular ſubject I may be then ſpeaking of; as the barrenneſs of language has not been able to afford diſtinct terms to them all, but is forced to wreſt known ones to different, and often unknown meanings; a proof of the injuſtice of the general complaint againſt the verboſity of the moderns; whereas, if (by many) diſtinct words are meant, their fault is directly the reverſe.

My new maſter was a perſon of ſome learning, and what was of more uſe, of thorough knowledge of the world; but wanting friends and intereſt to advance him to thoſe dignities which he thought due to his merit, he had ſollicited this place, in diſcharge of the duties of which he was indefatigably diligent, not merely for the paltry conſideration of a poor ſalary (for, as he was not in the ſecret, he had no ſhare of the ſpoils) though his circumſtances and knowledge of the value of money could not let him refuſe it, but to place his abilities in a more conſpicuous light, where they might take the notice of his ſuperiors.

As ſoon as he had received his ſtipend, he went home, where he found his wife dreſſed in all her beſt clothes, and expecting him with the utmoſt impatience! 'My dear (ſaid ſhe) how could you 'ſtay abroad ſo late? I have been waiting for you 'above theſe two hours, and was juſt going without ſeeing you.'—'*So late, my dear! it is ſcarcely ſix o'clock! But where are you going in ſuch haſte?*'—'To the Biſhop's! the Rector of —— 'died of an apoplectick fit as he was taking his 'nap after dinner this evening, and you know, 'my intimacy with the Biſhop's lady intitles me 'to aſk any thing from her.'—'*But, child, this is 'not in her power to give, and, even if it was, it is 'too much for a common acquaintance to expect!*'— 'This diffidence has been your ruin! You are 'always afraid of aſking, as if there was ruin in 'being refuſed; but that is not my caſe! *Aſk 'and you ſhall have*, is my text! Now-a days, 'nothing is got without it.'—'*Yes, child, but 'too frequent or improper aſking brings contempt.*'— 'The manner—the manner of aſking is the 'thing! And you cannot think I want to be 'taught that now, after having lived ſo long 'among the Great! Often have I known a re'queſt *properly* made gain a man a place, for 'which he was never dreamed of! As to the 'greatneſs of this living, never mind that! the 'greater it is, the greater will be your obli'gation to the perſon who gets it for you! What 'money have you got about you? We ſhall make 'a *party* perhaps. And let me have the five hun'dred pound note! I may have occaſion for that 'too, to make a *bett*.'

'*There, my dear, is the money I received to-day! 'I'll ſtep up for the note; but, pray, my deareſt,*

'*take*

'*take care what you do! It is our all! And be ſure*
'*you are not tempted to any thing like ſimony! It is*
'*a great crime, and makes a man incapable of ever*
'*riſing, if it is detected.*'—'And the fool that is
'detected deſerves never to riſe! You may call
'a thing by what nonſenſical name you pleaſe;
'but, if knowledge of the world were to prevent
'people's riſing in it, I do not know who would
'be uppermoſt now-a-days! Bring me the note,
'and leave the reſt to me. You ſhall know no-
'thing of what I intend till it is done, and then
'the fault, if any, will be all mine!—Here, *Jane*,
'ſettle the furbellows of my ſcarf, and, *John*,
'call a chair to the door directly.'—'*Well, my*
'*dear, here is the note: I leave all to you! I do*
'*not deſire to know what you intend: but remember,*
'*my dear, this note is our all!*'—'Never fear!
'The chair is come, and I muſt loſe no time! You
'will divert yourſelf with your children, or
'books, I ſuppoſe; or go to the coffee-houſe.
'Perhaps I may not return till it is late.'—'*I*
'*wiſh you ſucceſs, my dear, and pray be cautious.*'

With theſe words the Doctor retired, but to which of the amuſements his wife mentioned I cannot ſay, for he had given me to her, who carried me away to the Biſhop's.

When ſhe came there, the footman anſwered, that it was not his lady's *night*, and ſhe was not at home: but my miſtreſs had lived too long among the Great, to take his words in their literal meaning, but putting half a crown into his hand, told him ſhe had ſome earneſt buſineſs, and muſt ſee her. The doors inſtantly flew open, his lady was at home, and my miſtreſs ſhown up without any further difficulty.

The Biſhop's Lady was ſitting at a ſnug *party*, with three or four ſelect friends, and ſeemed not much pleaſed at the intruſion of my miſtreſs, to whom ſhe ſcarce deigned a nod, but turning to the footman, 'I thought, *ſirrah* (ſaid ſhe) that I 'was not to be at home this evening! I ſuppoſe 'I ſhall have all the mob of the town let in upon 'me.'—'Dear madam (replied my miſtreſs) the 'man is not to blame! He told me you were not 'at home; but, having ſome very earneſt buſi-'neſs, I made bold to break through your orders; 'but I hope for your pardon when you know 'the cauſe of my intruſion.'—'O madam (re 'turned the Lady) you know I am always glad 'of your company. I only chide the fellow for 'not obeying my orders. Pray, be ſeated, 'madam; as ſoon as the *rubber* is up I ſhall 'wait upon you.'——'Dear madam (added 'my miſtreſs) you need not give yourſelf that 'trouble; now I am with you my buſineſs can 'wait your leiſure.'

CHAP. II.

A genteel evening. A dream, and a bet, and a family ſupper. Conjugal tenderneſs. The Biſhop's dejection at the death of the Doctor, and danger of the Archbiſhop, is diverted by another dream.

WHEN the rubber was finiſhed, my miſtreſs was aſked to *cut in*, one of the party being taken ſuddenly ill, which ſhe did, and ſat out the whole evening, her ſucceſs at cards keeping up her ſpirits, and giving her hopes of the like

like in the greater affair she came about; but her patroness had very different fortune, having lost every rubber; and, what was still worse, several *by-bets*, which she made *to bring herself home*.

This put her into such a temper, that the moment the rest of the company was gone, she turned to my mistress, who saw them all out—'And now 'pray, madam, may I ask you what was the great 'business that brought you here this evening? (said 'she.) Unlucky business it has been for me, I 'know; for I have never held a card since you 'came: but I shall take care that rascal who 'let you in shall never serve me so again! He 'shall strip and turn off, without his breakfast, the 'moment I am up in the morning.'—'Dear ma-'dam (replied my mistress, unabashed at such a 'salute) have patience a moment, and I hope to 'make you amends for all! Will you please to sit 'down to one sober party of *piquet*? You are 'always too *hard* for me, yet I'll venture all my 'winnings, and perhaps what I have to say in 'the mean time may compensate for my intru-'sion.'

The lady could not imagine what she meant, but the thought of so good a match brought her a little to her temper, and, though it was near ten o'clock, she sat down to cards with as much keenness, as if six hours drudging at them had only whetted her desire for play.

As soon as a *repique* or two had confirmed her good humour, my mistress says to her, 'Dear 'madam, that is right! Have you heard of the sad 'accident that happened this evening?'—'Not I, '(replied the other) pray what was it?'—'Why 'poor Dr. ——, was taken shortly after dinner, 'and died in his chair!'—'*Aye, then, I suppose he*

'*had plum-porridge, and over-eat himſelf! and ſo*
'*burſt a pudding, as we ſay to children. Ha, ha,*
'*ha!*'——'Ha, ha, ha!—But, pray, madam,
'have you any faith in dreams? What do you
'think? I dreamed laſt night that I ſaw you at
'court, on ſome *great* occaſion, with juſt ſuch a
'diamond necklace on as the Counteſs's, which
'you had bought with five hundred pounds that
'you won from me on a *bet*; you laying that
'my huſband would, and I that he would not,
'get the Doctor's living! Well, to be ſure, there
'muſt be ſomething more than ordinary in it; for,
'can you believe it? this very morning I put a
'bank-note for five hundred pounds in my pocket,
'here it is; though I did not think of the poor
'man's death till I heard it as I came by this
'evening, when the dream ran ſo ſtrongly in my
'head, that I could not forbear breaking in upon
'you, a rudeneſs I never ſhould have been guilty
'of on any other occaſion.'—'*Dear madam, you*
'*need make no apology to me! You know your company*
'*is always welcome, I am always at home to you!*'—
'But, madam, what do you think of my dream?'
'*I don't know. I only wiſh it were to prove true!*
'*For five hundred pounds could never come more ſea-*
'*ſonably.*'—'Then you muſt win it; for my heart
'is ſet upon making the *bet*; and I aſſure you, I
'have ſuch a regard for you, that I do not even
'wiſh you to loſe! and that is what few gameſters
'can ſay.'—'*You are a pleaſant creature! but as*
'*for the* BET, *it ſhall be upon condition that my*
'*Lord is not under any engagement to the Miniſter,*
'*or her Grace who got him his biſhopric. If he is*
'*diſengaged, I will lay you, and you ſhall loſe, my*
'*girl, if it was ten times as much, and there's en-*
'*couragement for you to hold. The bell rings! Will*

'*you*

'*you walk down and take a bit of ſupper? There is*
'*nobody but my Lord and I; but do not take the leaſt*
'*notice of any thing about the matter, nor even ſeem*
'*to have heard of the Doctor's death, ſhould my Lord*
'*mention it; but muſter all your ſpirits, and be as*
'*entertaining as you can, for I always work him up*
'*beſt when he goes to bed in a good humour.*'

The piquet match being thus at an end, I was paid away to the biſhop's lady, whoſe winnings and expectations ſent her to ſupper in high ſpirits, where ſhe found his Lordſhip already ſeated in a very thoughtful mood.

After the uſual complimentary expletives that uſher in every polite converſation, 'Pray, my 'Lord (ſays my new miſtreſs to her huſband) 'what will you eat? Shall I help you to a bit of 'this fricaſſee? I believe it is very good.'—'No, 'my dear, I thank you (replied his Lordſhip) I 'have not the leaſt appetite! What is it pray?'— 'Sweet-breads and cock's-combs (returned his 'lady) you uſed to like them, and they are very 'nice! Or will you help yourſelf to a bit of that 'fowl before you? Something you muſt eat.'— '*No, my dear, I am obliged to your care; but I do not*
'*chooſe any thing to-night: I am not very well! We*
'*all eat too much! Repletion kills half the people of*
'England! *We eat too much!*'—You are going 'to be *hipped*, my dear! *John*, give your maſter a 'glaſs of *Madeira!* Fill the glaſs! Eating never 'hurted any one, who waſhed down his victuals 'with a glaſs of good wine; horſe-meals, indeed, 'are enough to choke human creatures. So! do 'not you find yourſelf better now? Taſte this 'fricaſſee; you cannot think how good it is!'— '*Well, you will have your way, you make me do as*
'*you pleaſe, though never ſo contrary to my inclina-*

'*tions! Do you call this a fricaſſee? I thought fricaſſees*
'*had ſpice put in them! This is as inſipid as chopped*
'*hay! Lord deliver us from ſuch cooks! The badneſs*
'*of ſervants, in general, ſeems to be a judgement on*
'*the vices of the age?*'—'Well, my dear, taſte
'that fowl, it looks like a good one, and the
'cook could not ſpoil that. Pray, madam, ſhall
'I trouble you to help his lordſhip to a leg and a
'wing, and a bit of the breaſt.'—'*You give me too*
'*much! I ſhall never be able to eat all this! beſide,*
'*you know, my dear, I chooſe a bit of the rump.*'—
'Eat that firſt, my dear, and then you ſhall have
'the rump: but what has happened to make you
'ſo low-ſpirited this evening?'—'*O child, who*
'*can be other than low ſpirited, when ſuch inſtances*
'*of mortality happen before our eyes every hour? Who*
'*can tell but the misfortune may be his own next mo-*
'*ment? There's Doctor* ——, *poor man! was*
'*taken off this evening, without a minute's warning*
'*to prepare for ſuch a tremendous change, juſt after*
'*he had made an hearty dinner! Here,* John, *take*
'*away my plate; I will not eat a bit more, nor ever*
'*ſleep after dinner again!*'—'And, *John, give*
'your maſter another bumper of *Madeira*; that
'was what the Doctor wanted, he eat a great
'deal, and did not allow himſelf any drink. Drink
'good wine, and never fear that eating will hurt
'you.'——'*Ah! but that was not the caſe of his*
'*Grace of* ——— —, *who lies this moment in the*
'*agonies of death! his phyſicians left him two hours*
'*ago! The lord prepare us all, and give us notice of*
'*his coming! He did not ſtint himſelf of wine; he*
'*took his bottle chearfully, good man!*'—'Chear-
'fully, did you ſay? I ſhould have ſaid ſottiſhly;
'for he has done nothing but drink for theſe many
'years paſt! He has run into the oppoſite extreme

'from

'from the Doctor, drinking too much, and not 'eating enough to ſupport nature. And I hope 'you do not ſay he is gone without warning at 'fourſcore? He has had time enough to prepare: 'but, why ſhould theſe examples affect you par-'ticularly? You do not eat like the Doctor, nor 'drink like his Grace, and are young enough to 'be ſon to the youngeſt of them; why then ſhould 'you fear their fate? Here, *John*, give me a 'pint glaſs half full of *Madeira*, and reach me 'three or four of thoſe jellies. Now, my dear, 'if you are afraid to eat or drink, ſup this with a 'bit of bread, and I will anſwer for its agreeing 'with you.'

My late miſtreſs ſat all this time at her ſupper, without being able to join in the converſation; but as ſoon as his Lordſhip's taking the jellies made a pauſe in his lady's tenderneſs, ſhe called for a glaſs of wine, and, bowing to the Biſhop, drank to him by the title of *his Grace* very gravely.

His Lordſhip ſtarted, and his Lady ſtared, while ſhe finiſhed her glaſs without any emotion, and ſeemed quite unconſcious of having ſaid any thing unuſual or improper. This behaviour ſtill embarraſſed them more; when the Lady, unable to contain her ſurpriſe, 'Dear madam (ſaid ſhe), 'what have you ſaid? Or how came you to ad-'dreſs my Lord by that title?'—'I hope, madam, (replied the other) I have not ſaid any thing im-'proper! You really frighten me! I hope I have 'not been failing in my reſpect, or addreſſed his 'Lordſhip by any improper title?'—I cannot 'ſay an improper one, indeed! but one that does 'not belong to him, at leaſt as yet,' (returned the Lady.)—'Dear madam, what do you mean? 'Pray, do not diſtreſs me! but you muſt divert

'yourſelf ſurely! It is not poſſible that I could fail 'in any reſpect to his *Grace!*'—'Ha, ha, ha! 'There it is again! Fail in your reſpect! No. 'You only raiſed your reſpect too high! You 'called him his *Grace*, that's all.'——'And is 'that all? Thank heaven that I did! and long 'live his *Grace*, I ſay again,' (ſaid ſhe dropping on her knees, and eagerly kiſſing his hand) 'long 'live your *Grace!* There is, there muſt be truth 'in dreams, and infidels alone can doubt it.'

At the mention of dreams, the Biſhop, who had hitherto continued to ſup up his jelly without ſeeming to take any notice of what they were ſaying, could not forbear ſhowing ſome emotion; for he had the ſtrongeſt faith in them, and always ſanguinely defended their credit, eſpecially ſince his preſent elevation had confirmed thoſe of his grandmother: '*What dreams? pray, good madam,*' (ſaid he, addreſſing my late miſtreſs with a viſible anxiety) '*What dreams do you mean? Thoſe which 'were thought to have reſpect to me are underſtood 'to be already accompliſhed.*'—'Pleaſe your Grace, 'the impulſe of the ſpirit is upon me, and I can-'not call you by any other title! Pleaſe your 'Grace, I ſay, I dreamed laſt night, as I told your 'Lady but juſt now, that I met her at court, on 'ſome very *great* occaſion, as fine as hands could 'make her (I told her this juſt now, before I 'knew one ſyllable of his *Grace*'s death) and that 'ſhe came up to me ſmiling, and thanked me for 'the cauſe of her coming there, for it was I who 'had made you a great man!—Now, what could 'this poſſibly mean, but what has happened here 'this moment, when, by giving you this title firſt '(and, Lord knows, I did it without the leaſt de-'ſign, or even being ſenſible of it when I did it)

'I

'I may in ſome manner be ſaid to have made you 'the great man it belonged to: let the world ſay 'what they will, I do believe there is truth in 'dreams, and I think mine is *out* now.'

She had run on with this rant at ſuch a rate, that it was impoſſible for the Biſhop to interrupt her, even had he been ſo inclined; but that was far from being the caſe: he heard her with attention, and what ſhe ſaid made ſuch an impreſſion on him, that he ſat ſome time muſing on it, after ſhe had ſtopped, before he had power to ſpeak a word.

As for his Lady, ſhe at once took it to be all a fetch, calculated merely to forward the ſcheme of the wager about the doctor's living, and as ſuch reſolved to humour it, and not interrupt his meditations, but addreſſing herſelf to the other, 'Indeed, 'madam (ſaid ſhe) I do not know what to ſay to 'this affair! When you told me your dream juſt 'now, I made nothing of it, but this account of his 'Grace's death almoſt ſtaggers me! Well, if this 'ſucceeds, and who knows what may happen, I 'ſhall ever hereafter have more faith in dreams!'

CHAP. III.

A diſſertation on dreaming. The dream purſued to the aſtoniſhment, and almoſt converſion, of the Biſhop's Lady. Her veracity in recounting ſome circumſtances relating to it. She and his Lordſhip perſuade each other to dream that it is true.

BY this time his Lordſhip had conſidered the matter, and addreſſing himſelf to the dreamer, 'Pray, madam (ſaid he) what time had you this

'viſion

'vision or dream? In the night, or towards the 'morning?'—'*In the morning, my Lord* (replied 'she) *at the conclusion of my second sleep: and, indeed, 'it made such an impression upon my mind, that I 'could not go to sleep after: for it was not in the 'confusion of common dreams! I saw every thing 'distinctly and regularly, as if I was in the very 'place; and particularly your Lady appeared as 'plainly to me as she sits there, Lord bless us! and 'by the same token, she was dressed in white damask, 'spick and span new, and had the most beautiful 'diamond necklace on that ever my eyes beheld; and 'charmingly she looked I thought.'

'I really do not know what to say to this mat-'ter (replied his Lordship with great deliberation) 'the visions of the morning have ever been held 'in most repute; for then the mind has recovered 'from the fatigues of the preceding day, and is 'able to exert its abilities, and look forward into 'the time to come. There are some good cir-'cumstances I own in this dream! I am glad that 'my wife was not dressed in colours; that would 'have been an ill omen; but white is the peculiar 'garment of success, angels are clad in white! 'and in this case particularly, it may prefigure 'the episcopal lawn, as that is an emblematical 'type of the purity of the episcopal function; and 'the episcopal and archiepiscopal differ only in de-'gree. As for the necklace, there may be more in 'that also than is apprehended. Precious stones are 'the *insignia* of dignity, and in the *Jewish* priest-'hood, particularly, were symbolical of the highest 'order; for none of the priests wore them but the 'supreme or high priest, whose dignity answered 'nearly to that of *Primate* with us; and if such 'further blessings should be the divine will, it

'were impious and ungrateful to refuſe its favours. 'Perhaps I ſpeak unintelligibly to you; but the 'opinions of the learned muſt be delivered in their 'phraſe.'—'*Pray, my Lord, proceed; I could hear 'your Lordſhip for ever; I am always the wiſer and 'the better for hearing your Lordſhip.*'

'Then, as to the credit to be given to dreams, '(reſumed his Lordſhip) though the ſcepticiſm of 'theſe unhappy times may deny it, yet the piety of 'wiſer antiquity was of another opinion, of which 'numberleſs inſtances might be given out of the 'holy ſcriptures. And among the *Gentiles*, the 'greateſt of their poets ſays, Οναρ τε Διος εστι, that 'is, in *Engliſh*, *Dreams proceed from* Jove, that is, 'from the ſupreme Deity, whom they erroneouſly 'called by that name. And though the heathens 'were guilty of great ſuperſtitions in this particu-'lar of dreams, it was not in the credit they gave 'them, but in the methods which they uſed to 'procure them; ſuch as offering ſacrifices, and 'ſleeping in the ſkins of the victims, and many 'others; whereas the dream that comes from hea-'ven, comes unſought and unexpected, and ſhould 'be received with reverence! And if this is ſuch, 'and I own it has much of the appearance, Thy 'will be done, O Lord! Thy ſervant ſubmits as 'it is his duty.'

Greatly as they muſt have been edified by this elaborate diſſertation, the ladies had much ado to refrain from laughing in his face while he delivered it, eſpecially his wife, who knew not which to admire moſt, the readineſs of the thought, or the eaſe with which it was received. But the dreamer had a further ſcheme in her head, to carry on which ſhe now got up to go away; and bending the knee to the Biſhop, 'My Lord (ſaid ſhe) may I beg your

'Lord-

'Lordſhip's bleſſing! I hope, and I am confident 'in that hope, that mine was not a common dream, 'from the impreſſion it made on my mind, which 'could not have been ſtronger, if I had actually 'been preſent at your Lady's kiſſing the King's 'hand on your promotion; but, if my zeal has 'hurried me too far in my expreſſions of it, I rely 'on your goodneſs to forgive my fault, which was 'rather an enthuſiaſm than a deſign; and ſo, my 'Lord, I beg leave to wiſh you a good night.'

With theſe words ſhe withdrew; and her patroneſs wondering ſhe had not thrown her a wink, and deſirous to have a laugh with her at her huſband's credulity, went as to ſee her to her chair; when turning with her into another room, 'That 'was an excellent thought (ſaid ſhe) and will 'make our affair quite eaſy, if he is not engaged.' —— '*I do not underſtand you, madam* (replied the 'other) *pray what thought do you mean?*'—'Why, 'child, that of the dream; what elſe ſhould I 'mean?'—'*A thought, dear madam! Why do not 'you think I was ſerious, and the dream real?*'—— 'Not one word of either, I aſſure you; and I wonder at your aſking me that queſtion here, where 'no one is preſent to obſerve us.'—'*Dear madam, 'you have quite miſtaken me, I aſſure you. It is 'true, I can jeſt ſometimes; but in this, give me 'leave to ſay, that I was moſt ſerious; and what is 'more, that I am ſure the event will confirm it.*'— 'You aſtoniſh me, madam; I declare, I looked 'upon the whole as a mere *fineſſe* to promote our 'ſcheme about the Doctor's living for your huſband!'—'*I am ſorry, madam, that you ſhould have 'ſuch an opinion of me, as that I could invent ſuch a 'ſtory on any account.*'—'Well (as I ſaid before, 'though in another ſenſe) I know not what to

'make

'make of the whole! But as you are so positive, 'and my Lord seems inclined to believe you, per- 'haps there may be more in it than I can see; and 'therefore I shall suspend my opinion till I see 'the end of it. This though I promise, that my 'assistance shall not be wanting to either part of 'the dream.'—'*And I promise you that I will make 'good all I said, particularly about the wager and the 'necklace; and so, madam, I wish you a good night. 'I shall do myself the pleasure to call and see how you 'are in the morning.*'

This gave the whole affair a new face; and threw the Bishop's Lady into a meditation as profound as his Lordship's. 'Can this be possible? '(said she to herself) and yet how could she have 'the face to stand it out so, if it was not true? 'But then it was but a dream! Aye, but my hus- 'band says dreams are not to be slighted; and he 'should know more than I, at least of those things 'that are to be found in books. And what if it 'should be so after all? and that I should take place 'of Mrs. ——, and Mrs. ——, and Mrs. ——, 'and all the rest of the Bishop's Ladies!—— 'That would be charming! and I believe in my 'soul I shall; for I have always looked upon them 'with a contempt that showed I should be one day 'their superior. Well, *Happy come lucky*, says the 'proverb; my endeavours shall not be wanting, 'as I promised Mrs. ——, whose five hun- 'dred pounds will be a pretty earnest of the arch- 'bishoprick.'

Having thus argued herself into a kind of belief of the dream, she went in to his Lordship, whom she found absorbed in thought about the *vision*: 'Well, my dear, said she (sitting down by him) 'what is your opinion of this strange matter? I

'own

'own it is above my comprehenſion! At firſt, I 'imagined ſhe might have been only in jeſt, and 'have invented the whole ſtory merely to divert 'your lowneſs of ſpirits; but when I went out 'with her into the next parlour, and put it home 'to her, ſhe ſtill perſiſted in it, and confirmed the 'truth of what ſhe ſaid by ſuch aſſeverations, that 'I could not avoid believing her.'

'*But, my dear* (replied his Lordſhip) *ſhe ſaid* '*ſhe told you her dream before ſhe came in here, or* '*had heard a word of his Grace's illneſs!*'——'She 'moſt certainly did, my Lord; and with other 'circumſtances, that make the whole ſtill more 'ſurpriſing! Pray, what time did the Doctor die, 'my dear?'——'*About half an hour after four.*'— 'That is moſt wonderful! And pray, my dear, 'who is to have his living? or are you under any 'engagement about it?'——'*No, child, I am not;* '*nor have I yet determined whom to give it to. But* '*why do you ask theſe queſtions? What are they to* '*the purpoſe of the dream?*'—'I ſhall tell you, my 'Lord. You muſt know then that ſhe came here 'about four o'clock, juſt as I had got up from din- 'ner, all in the greateſt hurry; and with a kind 'of wildneſs, I do not know how, in her looks, 'told me her dream; but with ſome circumſtances 'that I know her baſhfulneſs would not permit 'her to mention before you; and theſe were, that 'I had bought the diamond necklace, ſhe thought 'I had on at court, with five hundred pounds 'which I had won from her, on a wager that you 'would give her huſband the Doctor's living. 'Now, as he was not even ſick at the time of her 'telling me this, there could be no deſign in it; 'and this is what makes me take the more notice 'of the matter.'

'*But*

'*But are you ſure, child, that ſhe told you this ſo*
'*early as four o'clock?*'——'Rather before it, my
'dear; and what makes me ſo poſitive about it is,
'that a little after ſhe had finiſhed her ſtory, ſhe
'happened to look at her watch, but it was down,
'and ſo ſhe aſked me what o'clock it was by mine,
'that ſhe might ſet by it; and I remember it
'wanted exactly ſix minutes of four.'—'*Pray, let*
'*me look at your watch; have you not altered it*
'*ſince?*'—'No, my dear! but why do you aſk?'—
'*Becauſe it is nine minutes faſter than mine, and it*
'*was juſt half an hour paſt four by his watch, as they*
'*told me, when he died, and his and mine were exactly*
'*together; ſo that the ſix minutes which your watch*
'*wanted of four, and the nine minutes it is faſter than*
'*mine, make a quarter before four, which was three*
'*quarters before he died. This is moſt wonderful!*
'*for there could be no deſign or art in it. This is moſt*
'*wonderful! But there have been many revelations*
'*made in dreams, even in our own times; as for in-*
'*ſtance, that in* DRELINCOURT; *for it could be*
'*no other than a dream; and that other of the great*
'*Duke of* BUCKINGHAM'*s riſe, and afterwards*
'*of his death, as it is moſt judiciouſly and faithfully*
'*repreſented by the Reverend Hiſtorian*, not to men-*
'*tion many more. As to the Doctor's living, my dear,*
'*I make you a compliment of it; you may give it to*
'*whom you pleaſe: though the curate is a very learned*
'*and good man, and has a large family; beſide that*
'*he has been recommended to me by the whole pariſh,*
'*whom his long reſidence among them, for he has been*
'*there above thirty years, has made love and reſpect*
'*him as a father.*'—'Then let them provide for
'him, like dutiful children. What aſſurance! to
'pretend to dictate to you, as if you were not the
'proper

* *Echard.*

'proper judge of ſuch matters! If it was for no 'other reaſon I would not give it to him, to teach 'them their duty and diſtance another time.'

'*There may be ſomething in that: I do not like* 'ſuch interfering in my conduct neither; *and therefore* 'you may give it to whom you pleaſe. *And her huſ-* 'band is a man of learning and good character too, 'who will not diſcredit any preferment; *but take care* 'that you do not any thing improper. *As to your* 'wager, *there is no harm in that; but even ſo, it* 'ſhould be kept a ſecret; *I muſt know nothing of the* 'matter.'—'I thank you, my dear Lord; I ſhall 'be ſure to obſerve your directions; and the ac-'compliſhment of this part of the dream I take as 'an happy preſage of the reſt; but you muſt not be 'wanting to yourſelf; you had better, I think, go 'to her *Grace*, and ſee what may offer to promote 'our hopes.'—'*That is not a bad thought, my dear*; '*but it grows late*; *in the morning we ſhall ſee what* 'is to be done.' Saying this, they withdrew, whi-ther we muſt not follow them; for of the genial bed 'with moſt myſterious reverence I deem.'

CHAP. IV.

Hiſtory of the dreamer. She loſes her wager, which ſhe pays with pleaſure. His Lordſhip waits upon her Grace. His knowledge of the world promotes a noble inſtance of charity. CHRYSAL *enters into the ſervice of her Grace.*

I Have obſerved your ſurpriſe and admiration at the ready preſence of mind and confidence of my late miſtreſs, who could, in a moment, invent ſuch

ſuch a ſtory, and perſiſt in it ſo ſteadily, as not only to impoſe upon the Biſhop's eaſy credulity, but even upon his wife alſo, who was, in a manner, in the ſecret of her deſign, but could not interrupt my ſtory to ſatisfy it ſooner, by giving you her hiſtory.

She was a diſtant relation to a noble Lord, on whom the extravagance of her father left her dependent. This occaſioned her being taken into his family; where ſhe lived ſeveral years as an humble companion to his Lady. As ſhe was handſome, his Lordſhip had a mind for a nearer relation with her; but an unfaſhionable virtue prevented her compliance, which turned his love into the ſtrongeſt hatred, for fear ſhe ſhould inform his lady, to whom ſhe was not more agreeable, and upon the ſame account; as her obſerving temper had given her an opportunity of ſeeing much more than her Ladyſhip deſired to have her tell.

This made her ſituation very unhappy in the family; and inclined her to hearken to the addreſſes of the Chaplain, to whom his Lordſhip gave a ſmall vicarage with her, as did his Lady five hundered pounds, that they might part decently, and not provoke her to ſpeak. As for herſelf, you have ſeen that nature was liberal to her in the endowments of her mind, which the ſtate which ſhe was bred in improved, or rather ſharpened into a thorough knowledge of the world, that enables her to take the advantage of all its follies. But to return to the Biſhop and his Lady. This affair had made ſuch an impreſſion on their minds, that they could dream of nothing elſe all night but pomp and precedence, which effectually ſecured the grant in favour of my late miſtreſs from all danger of revocation.

They

They were ſcarce ſeated to breakfaſt, when word was brought them that ſhe was below; upon which ſhe was immediately invited up, her company being too agreable to admit of any diſtance or reſerve.

The compliments of the morning being paid on all ſides, his Lordſhip, with a look of great benevolence, aſked her for her huſband, and if he was at home; to which ſhe anſwered that he was, and ready to pay his duty to his lordſhip, if he had any commands to honour him with. 'None that will 'be diſagreable I hope (replied his Lordſhip) 'and if he is at leiſure.'—'At leiſure, my Lord! (replied ſhe in a kind of rapture, for a wink from the Lady had explained the matter to her.) 'He is, 'he muſt be at leiſure! No buſineſs can interfere 'with his duty! I'll ſtep for him this moment.'—'You need not give yourſelf that trouble, madam '(returned his Lordſhip.) *John*, do you go and tell 'Mr. —— that I ſhould be glad to ſpeak with 'him. For, madam, I think I cannot do leſs than 'reward his learning, piety, and good life, with 'the *living* of the poor Doctor. It is what I have '*long* reſolved, though I never mentioned it before, 'becauſe I would not torture him with expecta-'tions; and I give it to him now, thus early and '*unasked*, to ſpare his modeſty, and to ſave myſelf 'from the ſollicitations of others.'—'Long live, 'God bleſs your *Grace*;' (ſaid ſhe, throwing herſelf at his feet, and embracing his knees in extacy) 'for ſo I ſee it will be, every thing will come *out* 'juſt according to my dream! I could not forbear 'ſending to the *late* Archbiſhop's, juſt before I 'came here, and the porter (for I would not ſend 'a ſervant, for fear my known attachment to your 'Lordſhip ſhould make it taken notice of) brought

'me

'me word, *that he was at peace.*'—This completed the Biſhop's faith, and prevented his ſending to enquire, for the ſame delicate reaſon that ſhe gave.

'I muſt wiſh you joy, madam (ſaid the Biſhop's Lady) of this advance in your fortune! 'Though I am almoſt angry that my Lord did 'not let me into the ſecret. I have loſt ſome 'hours happineſs by his reſerve; for I always 'make the happineſs of my friends my own.'—'*Dear madam, I thank you; on my knees I thank, I 'pray for you both! And give me leave, madam, 'to wiſh YOU joy of his* LORDSHIP'S *promotion, and 'of your juſt advance in rank, as well as of all the 'ornaments belonging to it!*'—'The necklace, I 'ſuppoſe you mean? Ha, ha, ha!'——'*I do, in-'deed, dear madam, and of every other happineſs 'that can attend ſo elevated a ſtation.*'

Her huſband now entered, in the utmoſt agitation of ſpirits between hope and fear; for he was not a ſtranger to his wife's ſcheme; (indeed he had ſuggeſted the firſt hint of the *bet* himſelf, but with an addreſs that made her think it was her own, he ſpoke ſo diſtantly; for he always preſerved the appearance of character, even with her) and the ladies not thinking it proper to be preſent at the myſterious ceremony of the Biſhop's ſigning the *collation*, which he did directly, to avoid giving offenſe, by refuſing other applications, they withdrew, when my miſtreſs was paid her *bett*, with as great pleaſure, by the loſer, as ſhe felt in receiving it.

The *dream* being thus far happily accompliſhed, the ſucceſsful dreamer and her huſband went home in the higheſt joy, at being at length relieved from the anxiety of dependence, and the fears of want; while my Lord prepared to pay his duty at her *Grace's*

Grace's levee, and ſee whether any thing ſhould offer that might promote his part of it.

When he was ready to go, he called to his Lady to receive her advice, and, recollecting that he had forgot his purſe, deſired to borrow her's, in which I was, and thus I changed my ſervice once more.

When his Lordſhip entered her *Grace's* levee, and had paid his moſt humble reſpects, he found the converſation turn on a melancholy accident that had lately happened to a village in his dioceſe, which was entirely burnt to the ground by an accidental fire. There were many circumſtances ſo moving in the account of this misfortune, as to raiſe the compaſſion of the whole company, and particularly of her *Grace*, who ſaid, that ſhe would moſt willingly contribute to the relief of their diſtreſs, but that unluckily ſhe had not leſs than a bank note for twenty pounds about her.

All the company, *who knew the world*, underſtood her *Grace*, and dropped the ſubject; but my new maſter, who had his knowledge of *mankind* moſtly from *books*, was ſo far from taking the hint, that he thought he ſhowed his reſpect to his patroneſs, by offering to change her note, or lend her whatever money ſhe wanted.

Hee *Grace* was ſurpriſed, as the company were confounded, at the *ignorant inſolence* of ſuch an offer. However, as this was not an occaſion for ſhowing her reſentment, ſhe coldly told him, ſhe would trouble him for the change, and having received it, gave two guineas to the perſon who had mentioned the affair, and careleſly threw the reſt, *among which I was*, into her pocket, not caring to pull out her purſe, as it was full of money.

My late maſter, pleaſed with the thought of having been inſtrumental in ſo meritorious a benevolence

volence, diſplayed his eloquence in thanks to her for her eminent charity to his poor flock, and then gave a guinea himſelf; (for reſpect to her *Grace* would not permit him to exceed the half of her bounty) as did the reſt of the company, who all laughed in their ſleeves, to think how my maſter had ruined himſelf with her *Grace* by his blunder.

But his mind was too full of the dream to obſerve their looks, and he was ſo far from being ſenſible that he had done amiſs, that when her *Grace* was going to retire, he boldly ſtepped up to her, and begged leave to ſpeak a word or two with her in private.

Though the aſſurance of this requeſt greatly aggravated his former offenſe, yet ſhe could not decently refuſe ſuch a favour to his rank, and therefore ſlightly nodded to him to follow her.

CHAP. V.

The Biſhop obtains the honour of a private audience. His extenſive charity. He makes her Grace his almoner, to relieve his fellow Proteſtants in GERMANY. *He is ſtrangely affected at the news of the Archbiſhop's recovery. Her Grace's character.*

THE great honour of this private audience, at firſt, put him into ſome confuſion, but, recollecting the conſequence at ſtake, he, after much heſitation, made a ſhift to tell her, that, 'ſenſible of her *Grace*'s great humanity and compaſſion for the ſufferings of the diſtreſſed, of 'which ſhe had juſt given ſo noble an in-

'ſtance'—'Pray, my lord, no compliments,' (ſaid her Grace, interrupting him with a look and accent not very encouraging) 'I am not at preſent 'at leiſure for them, and if you have no other 'buſineſs'—'May it pleaſe your *Grace*, (replied 'the Biſhop) Your virtues are above compli-'ment! and I come to give you an opportunity 'of exerting them, not ſolely to praiſe them.'—'*I do not underſtand you, my Lord! and I am in 'ſome haſte!*'———'I moſt humbly beg your '*Grace*'s pardon, I ſhall not delay you long! 'To come then briefly to the purpoſe, I muſt 'inform your *Grace*, that out of the income 'which it hath pleaſed the Divine Providence, 'through your *Grace*'s means to give me, I 'have thought it my duty to lay by ſome little 'matter, to make a return with, to the Divine 'beneficence, in charity to his diſtreſſed crea-'tures. Now, as your *Grace*'s kind intereſt 'was the means through which this ability was 'conferred upon me, I have made bold to trouble 'you with the diſtribution of my mite.——'*Me, 'my Lord? You aſtoniſh me! I cannot compre-'hend you!*'——'I beg your *Grace*'s indul-'gence for a moment. You will forgive this 'boldneſs, when you know the motive!——— 'hem! hem!

'The ſufferings of my *Proteſtant* brethren in 'Germany (I ſay brethren, for men ſhould know 'no diſtinction, but religion) their ſufferings, I 'ſay, in this calamitous time of war and rapine, 'when the ambition of princes works the ruin 'of their people, has made ſuch an impreſſion 'upon my heart, that I come to offer this ſmall 'matter to your *Grace*, to be applied to their 'relief, as your better knowledge ſhall ſee moſt

'proper:

'proper; a trouble which I ſhould not have pre-
'ſumed to give your *Grace*, did not I know
'that ſuch works of charity are a pleaſure to
'you; and that the better information, which
'in your high rank you muſt neceſſarily have,
'will enable you to apply it more effectually to
'their relief than I, in the darkneſs and igno-
'rance of my humble ſtation, poſſibly can. I
'am almoſt aſhamed of the ſmallneſs of the ſum
'(it is but two thouſand pounds) but it is all
'that I have yet been able to ſave; though I
'hope to give a better account of my ſteward-
'ſhip another time; and that I ſhall be found not
'to have buried my talent, eſpecially if it ſhould
'pleaſe the Divine Providence to raiſe me to a
'higher ſtation, and thereby put the means more
'liberally into my power.

'I moſt humbly beg your *Grace*'s forgiveneſs of
'this intruſion of your time. I am your *Grace*'s
'moſt humble ſervant.'——'Stay, my Lord (re-
'turned her Grace, with a look and accent ſoft-
'ened into the moſt engaging affability.) Pray,
'do not go: I ſee you ſo ſeldom, except *in the*
'*croud*, that I cannot part with you ſo ſoon. I
'thank you for the confidence you place in me;
'and ſhall apply your charity to the beſt of my
'judgement. Poor people! they greatly want re-
'lief, and if the invincible fortitude of the *Bul-*
'*garian* monarch does not extricate them ſoon,
'they will be entirely ruined. But every thing
'is to be hoped for from ſuch a hero!

'You are very good to conſider the diſtreſſes
'of the poor people! there are few now who
'think of any thing but themſelves; ſo their ap-
'petites are ſatisfied, they have no feeling for
'what others ſuffer. But, my Lord, is there

'any thing that I can ſerve you in? You may 'depend upon my intereſt at all times.'——'I 'am much beholden to your *Grace*' (replied his Lordſhip, elevated at ſuch an offer, and now ſecure as he thought of his hopes;) 'I am much 'beholden to your *Grace!* I have had too much 'experience of your *Grace*'s goodneſs to doubt 'it. Nothing that I know of at preſent: if 'any thing ſhould happen, I ſhall be moſt grate-'ful to your *Grace* for your kind remembrance. 'We are all deſirous of having our power to do 'good enlarged.'——

'*Yes, my Lord; all good men, like your Lord-'ſhip, are. It is a duty to deſire ſo. But, have 'you heard any thing of the Archbiſhop of* ——— '*lately?*'—'Not *very* lately, pleaſe your Grace.' —'*I believe that old man will never die! He was 'taken with a fit yeſterday, and it was thought he 'would expire every moment, but he has got over 'it, and is abroad to-day as well as he has been for 'many years.*'——'In—d-e-e-d!'—'*What is the 'matter, my Lord? Something ſeems to ail you.*'— 'A—a—ſud-den—f—aint—neſs has———come '—o—o-ver—me; I—mu-ſt—beg—y—our— 'Grace—'s—p-ardon—. I—am y—our— 'Grace—'s—m—oſt—h—h——umb——ble ſer-'vant——:' with which words he made a bad ſhift to crawl out, muttering to himſelf—'*O my 'money! my money. O this curſed dream! my 'money! my money!*'——

Her *Grace* looked earneſtly after him for a few minutes, as if loſt in thought, and then burſting into a loud laughter, 'And is it ſo, my good 'Lord? does the wind ſit that way? Then I can 'account for your charity: Ha! ha! ha!———

'But

'But you are disappointed this time, and, I 'fear, will be the next too, if you do not *bid* 'better. Two thousand for five hundred a year! 'Is that your conscience? But it will never 'do.'——

I was now at the summit of human grandeur, the favourite of the favourite of a mighty monarch. For curiosity tempting me to take a view of my new mistress's heart, as she sat at her toilet, I found myself established there without a rival, in the most absolute authority, every passion being subservient to my rule; even the love of power, which had, in every other instance, disputed the empire with me, being *here* my most abject slave, and encouraged for no other reason than solely to promote my interest; the mighty spirit of the immense mass of gold which my mistress had accumulated having taken entire possession of her soul.

CHAP VI.

The true use of court-favour. The Biter bitten. An easy way to obtain a fine feather for a fool's cap. The insolence of office, in hindering an house to be built instead of a hen-coop; and spoiling her Grace's dairy. How to make the most of a common. A Beau Lord beaten by a Bailiff, for walking the fields in an undress.

WHILE my late master retired, to meditate on the exposition of dreams, and to please himself with the virtuous reflexion of so singular an act of charity, her Grace sat down to

her toilet, where I saw art triumph over the depredations of time, and create a beauty denied by nature.

When this serious work was so far completed that she could attend to other business, one of her most favoured domesticks told her, that she had that very morning received an offer from a man who kept a noted beer-house, and shuffle-board, for the place of a tapster to the Lord-Mayor, which she was sure her Grace's interest would readily obtain. 'Tapster! (answered her Grace) 'what is the value of that place? Reach me the 'list of employments, with their salaries and 'perquisites, out of that drawer. Let me see! 'Tapster to the Lord-Mayor! aye, here it is! 'Well, and pray what does he offer for it?'—— 'A thousand guineas, please your Grace (replied 'her woman) which I really think enough for 'it, considering every thing'—'Do you, indeed! 'But I do not. Why, it is rated to me here, as 'worth five hundred pounds a year; and is that 'worth no more than a thousand guineas! Does 'the fellow value his own life only at two years 'purchase?——'Five hundred pounds a year! 'How can that be? The salary is no more than 'sixty; there must be some mistake in your 'return.'——'The salary, the salary signifies 'nothing; it is the perquisites! The perquisites 'are the thing! Do you think any place is va-'lued by the salary? The perquisites of this 'place are very considerable! Let me see! Why, 'he buys in all the beer and gin himself, for 'which he can charge what price he pleases; and 'then his own account is taken for the quan-'tity that is drunk. Aye indeed: there must be 'a mistake in my return to be sure; but not of

'the

'the kind you mean. The place is rated too 'low; for, with ſuch opportunities, it muſt be 'worth twice the ſum; and I ſhall enquire into 'that matter before I diſpoſe of the place. A 'thouſand guineas for ſuch a place! I wonder 'at the fellow's conſcience to make ſuch an 'offer!'—'All this is very true; but then there 'are ſome circumſtances that muſt be conſidered 'on the other hand too. You know the Lord-'Mayor's year is almoſt ended; and then, who 'knows whether his ſucceſſor will continue all 'the ſervants or not? This one it certainly is 'moſt likely he will not; for as he is a known 'enemy to gambling, and has publickly declared 'that he will put the laws in execution againſt all 'ſuch practices, it cannot be thought that he 'will permit a fellow who has kept an houſe 'that has been ſo notorious for it, and where 'ſo many men have been brought to the gal-'lows, and their families to beggary, to hold a 'place of ſuch profit under him; beſides, he has 'people of his own to provide for, who have 'ſerved his father and himſelf in ſuch a man-'ner as to deſerve his confidence and regard, 'ſo that every chance (to ſpeak in his own 'way) is againſt this man, which is ſo well 'known, that nobody elſe would bid for the 'thing at all; wherefore, if I may preſume 'to ſpeak my opinion, his offer ſhould be im-'mediately accepted.'——'There may be ſome-'thing in what you ſay; but then, if it was 'ſo very precarious a place, do you think ſome 'of his cuſtomers would not inform him of it! 'they certainly muſt know it.'——'Why, the 'very reaſon of my deſiring your Grace to cloſe 'with him directly is, for fear they ſhould tell

'him, as they undoubtedly would, if they ſuſ-
'pected his intention in the leaſt; but he con-
'ceals it from them; for the principal motive
'of his quitting the buſineſs he is in, and ſeek-
'ing this place, is, becauſe the greateſt part of
'his cuſtomers have got deeply into his debt,
'which he can never expect them to pay, while
'he continues his buſineſs; whereas, he thinks,
'if he can get this place, it will be a good
'excuſe for his calling in his money, and then
'the Lord-Mayor's power will protect him from
'their reſentments. This is the true ſecret of
'the matter; for, if it was not on this account,
'he has a much better opportunity of getting
'money where he is, than in any place.'——
'Well then, be it ſo! make the moſt you can
'of it; and I care not how ſoon the fellow is
'turned out after.—What is the matter? what
'do you laugh at?'——'I beg your Grace's
'pardon, an odd thought juſt came in my head,
'but it does not ſignify.'——'What is it? Come;
'I muſt know it.'—'Why, I am almoſt aſhamed
'to mention it; though it is but a trifle nei-
'ther, as ſuch matters go now. Your Grace
'knows that my huſband has a place under the
'Lord-Mayor! Now, it juſt came into my head,
'that when his Lordſhip comes to wait upon
'the King, to be knighted, it would be no bad
'joke, if his Majeſty could be prevailed on to
'knight my huſband alſo.'——'Ha! ha! ha!
'And ſo madam has a mind to be a Lady.
'Why, with all my heart. There is no great
'matter in it, to be ſure! and I ſee no reaſon
'why you ſhould not have that title as well
'as a chandler, or ſhoemaker's wife. Indeed,
'the candidates for knighthood have run ſo very
'low

'low of late, that a man of honour ſhould be 'aſhamed to accept of it But that is no con-'cern of mine! I got the money, and where I 'can do that, I care not if it was from Jack 'Ketch: let others look to that. Well; ſince 'you have taken a fancy to ſtick a fool's fea-'ther in your cap, tell your good man, when 'he kneels by his maſter at the important cere-'mony, not to be too haſty to riſe, and I'll take 'care your ambition ſhall be ſatisfied; though 'I do not know what we muſt do then. Your '*Ladyſhip* will never condeſcend to put on my 'ſhoes, or take away the bed-pan; ſo that I 'believe I muſt look out for another ſervant.'— 'Your Grace is pleaſed to joke; but you are 'very well convinced, that I have no ambition 'above your ſervice; and ſhall ever be proud 'to perform the meaneſt offices about you. In-'deed, in this affair, I have more reſpect to 'your Grace's honour, than to myſelf. While 'I wait upon you (and I would not give up 'that, to be made a counteſs) I am but your 'ſervant, let me be called by what title I will: 'but, then, I think it is not proper that you 'ſhould be waited on by common ſervants, like 'any other perſon of your apparent rank. As 'you are the fountain of all honour and no-'bility, you ſhould have Nobles to attend you, 'as well as Knights, if I could have my wiſh. 'And it was this tenderneſs of your Grace's 'honour that made me ſo particularly affected, 'at what happened yeſterday.'——'Yeſterday! 'I do not underſtand you!—What happened 'yeſterday?'——'Your Grace may remember 'that you were ſo kind ſome time ago as to 'obtain leave for me, from the Lord of the

'Manor, to build a little poultry-houſe in a 'corner of yonder common field. I accord-'ingly ſet the maſons to work, and, liking the 'ſituation, thought it was no great treſpaſs to 'enlarge the yard a little, and build a lodge, 'with a room or two, where I could have my 'clothes waſhed, and drink a diſh of tea with 'a friend at any time I might have a mind to 'be retired; but, behold, after the wall of the 'yard was built, and the lodge raiſed as high 'as the firſt ſtory, the Bailiff of the manor 'happened to come by, and, ſeeing what I in-'tended, had the inſolence to fly into a paſſion, 'and, ſaying it was an encroachment beyond the 'leave I had obtained, obliged the workmen to 'pull down every ſtone they had laid, though 'I myſelf, on receiving notice of it, went there, 'and told him it was by your Grace's order, 'and for your own uſe, and alledged the ex-'penſe you had been at; but it was all to no 'purpoſe, for he would not leave the place till 'his orders were executed: nor was this all; 'he has had the aſſurance alſo to ſend me word 'this very morning that he would diſtrain the 'cows, that you deſired me to put to graze in 'that field, if I do not directly pay for their pa-'ſture, according to the rate he is pleaſed to 'charge; which is more than I have been able to 'make of the milk; though, by your Grace's re-'commendation, I have had ſo good cuſtomers for 'it; ſo that inſtead of the profit I expected to 'make for you of your Dairy, your Grace is 'like to be a loſer.'—'Inſolent, unreaſonable 'fellow! Not to be content with his own ex-'travagant profits, without hindering every body 'elſe of coming in for the leaſt advantage with 'him:

'him: but he has neither ſhame, nor conſci-
'ence, or elſe he would be ſatisfied with plun-
'dering the ponds, and ſelling the fiſh, and
'hiring out the graſs as he does, without put-
'ting the pariſh to the expenſe of fencing in
'the common, to prevent the people even from
'walking over the graſs! But, I may, ſome
'time or other, find a way to be even with
'him. He ſtands but badly in his maſter's fa-
'vour, who deſpiſes ſuch avarice, and would
'turn him out of his place directly, but that
'unluckily he has it, under his hand, for life;
'however, I ſhall watch every opportunity to
'return him the compliment; that I can aſſure
'him. Let him take ſuch liberties with his
'equals! I'll have him to know, that he ſhall
'treat me with more reſpect.'

'That is true! has your Grace heard how
'cavalierly he behaved lately to the young
'Lord ———? I forget his name. The great
'beau that made ſuch a noiſe by dangling
'after the gentleman's wife.'———'I know
'whom you mean: No! I have heard nothing
'about him, what has been the matter?——
'Ha! ha! ha! I do not believe I ſhall be able
'to tell it for laughing. Why, your Grace
'muſt know, that the Beau was walking, one
'morning, in a very plain dreſs, acroſs the upper
'part of the common, where happening to meet
'a farmer's maid, going to drive home her cows,
'he entered into chat with her, and prevailed
'upon her to quit the path, and walk with him
'into an unfrequented part of the field, where
'they ſat down under a clump of trees, for
'the ſake of a little very innocent converſation,
'to be ſure. Well; they had not been there

'long, when one of the Under-bailiffs, whom 'this infolent fellow keeps to watch the graſs, 'ſeeing them go out of the road, followed them; 'and coming upon them in a very unſeaſonable 'minute, not only interrupted their converſa- 'tion, but alſo aſked the Lord (whoſe quality he 'never ſuſpected) in an imperious manner, how 'he dared to trample the graſs, and threatened 'to take him and his whore before a juſtice, 'and have them directly ſent to Bridewell. 'This inſult aggravated the offenſe of his in- 'truſion to ſuch a height, that the Lord, in a 'rage, bade the ſcoundrel inſtantly get out of his 'ſight, or he would break his head. Such 'words, from a perſon of his appearance, raiſed 'the inſolence of office ſo high, that the Bailiff, 'without any more ado, lifted his ſtaff, and 'knocked his Lordſhip down, where he bela- 'boured him ſeverely, repeating the word Scoun- 'drel, between every blow, till the poor battered 'Beau was in a moſt doleful plight, though he had 'often told him who he was, and roared out his 'quality with all his might; but the enraged 'fellow either did not, or pretended that he did 'not, believe him.

'When he had beaten him as much as he 'thought he could, without danger of the gallows, 'he dragged him along to the highway, where 'fortunately a coach happened to come by, the 'owner of which knew his Lordſhip, and took 'him up, ordering his ſervants to apprehend the 'Bailiff, but he was too nimble for them, and 'made his eſcape; and now finding his miſtake, 'and the danger into which he had fallen, he 'went directly to his maſter, and telling him the 'ſtory in the moſt favourable manner for himſelf,

'prevailed

'prevailed upon him to promiſe to ſtand by him; 'particularly, as he alledged that the affair had 'proceeded from his great care of his maſter's 'graſs, which could never be kept, if he ſhould 'be left to ſuffer for defending it.

'In the mean time, the poor Lord was in ſo 'very bad a taking, that all the phyſicians and 'ſurgeons in town were gathered about him; by 'whoſe aſſiſtance he was confined to his bed for 'near a week. As ſoon as he was permitted to 'ſpeak, and ſee his friends, he ſent directly to the 'head Bailiff, to let him know how his man had 'uſed him; but all the ſatisfaction he could ob-'tain, even when he went and applied in perſon, 'was to have the fellow removed to another part 'of the common; nor could he obtain this, till 'he declared that he would make his complaint 'directly to the Lord of the Manor, if he had 'not ſome redreſs. It is ſaid, he talked of chal-'lenging him; but he is one of the grand jury of 'the court-leet, and therefore cannot be called 'to an account that way.'

CHAP. VII.

An odd viſitor to a lady. The myſtery of ſtock-jobbing. Charity begins at home. Her Grace's kind intentions for honeſt Aminadab. Another viſitor. The worth of honour. The beſt ſalve for a broken character.

BY this time the myſteries of the toilet were over, and my miſtreſs's face finiſhed for the day, when a perſon entered to her, whoſe appearance

ance was far from promiſing ſuch an intimacy with a lady of her rank.

The moſt ſhabby, ſqualid dreſs covered a diſtorted carcaſe, not much above four feet high, but ſo groſs, that, laid upon his back, he would have caſt a ſhadow near as long as when he ſtood upright. A deep olive complexion, an aquiline noſe, and a mouth from ear to ear, fringed round with a greaſy, curled beard, made the beauty of his face correſpond with the elegance of his figure.

This extraordinary perſon approached her *Grace* without introduction or ceremony, and, entering immediately upon buſineſs, told her, 'that he came to know if ſhe meant to *buy in* 'that day, for the report raiſed in *the Alley*, by 'their expreſs from abroad, had given ſuch a 'ſtroke to the funds, that they had tumbled to 'the ground; but would moſt certainly riſe again 'the next day, as ſoon as the news which had 'arrived that morning ſhould be known; which 'could not be kept a ſecret as the people wanted ſomething to keep up their ſpirits, among 'ſo many miſcarriages, and divert them from 'making too cloſe enquiries into the conduct of 'affairs.'

'Why, my honeſt friend *Aminadab!* (replied 'her *Grace*) I muſt be directed in theſe matters 'by you. If you think there is any thing to be 'got by *buying in* to-day, with all my heart: 'though, I muſt own, I cannot conceive why 'you ſhould *ſell out* the very laſt week to '*buy in* this.'

'Ah! my Lady (returned *Aminadab*) there is 'a myſtery in all buſineſs, and in none greater 'than our's. The *Bulgarian* King's ſucceſs laſt

'week

'week raiſed people's ſpirits ſo high, that they 'thought the world was to be all their own, 'and therefore bought at any price. Now, that 'was the time for a prudent perſon to *ſell*, as 'I adviſed your *Grace*; which we had no ſooner 'done, than inſtantly comes an expreſs *(of our 'own)* with an account that the enemy had turn-'ed upon him in their retreat, and entirely van-'quiſhed the vanquiſhers.

'This news quite overthrew the ſpirits raiſed 'by the former, and made every one eager to ſell 'out at any loſs, for fear the enemy ſhould *get 'wings and fly over*, to take all they had. Now, 'as this was but a terror raiſed by ourſelves, we 'take the advantage of it, and ſo buy in, when 'others are ſelling out, 20 *per cent.* cheaper than 'we ourſelves ſold out laſt week, when the mad-'neſs bent the other way, and may perhaps *ſell* 'again the next, when another packet ſhall ſet 'things right, and bring the people back their 'ſenſes. For the ſenſes of the people of this coun-'try are as inconſtant as the ſea, depending entire-'ly upon the winds that blow them news.'

'*But, is it really poſſible that any people can be 'ſuch fools?*'—'O, pleaſe your *Grace*, they are 'only too rich! they have more money than they 'know what to do with; that is all.'——'*Then 'Aminadab, we will eaſe them of ſome of the bur-'then. And would it not be better to conceal this 'news for another day; might not that make them 'fall ſtill lower?*'———'But, my Lady, the 'people want the good news.'———'*The people 'may hang themſelves in deſpair! I care not, ſo I 'get money.*'——'The government though.'—— '*What is the government to me? I will get all I 'can, and then leave them to themſelves, to ſink or*

'*ſwim*

'*ſwim as they will; it is all one to me?*'——'That 'is true; your *Grace* ſays right. A people who 'do not know, or, at leaſt, will not follow their 'own intereſt, are not worth any perſon's care, 'longer than while he can make ſomething of 'them. But we muſt reſerve that ſtroke for an- 'other time. This news has got into the offices, 'and nothing there is a ſecret, you know. Be- 'ſides, the *Panick* was too violent to laſt; it be- 'gins to wear off already: in another day they 'would recover their ſenſes of themſelves. I think, 'therefore, with your *Grace's* approbation, to *buy* 'in all I can to-day; without you had rather lay 'out your money in the ſupplies for the Pro- 'teſtants of *Germany.*'——'*With all my heart, 'if you can make as much of it that way as in the 'funds; but not otherwiſe. I would not loſe one 'ſhilling for any people under heaven!*'

'Your *Grace* has a juſt notion of the world, and 'of the value of money that governs it. Indeed, 'I muſt ſay, that the terms for theſe ſupplies are 'very unreaſonable, conſidering how ſuch things 'have been done for ſome time paſt. It is ex- 'pected that people ſhould bring in their money, 'without any *premium*, or other advantage, than 'what was publickly calculated for, at the grant- 'ing them. But theſe œconomiſts will find them- 'ſelves miſtaken. The world is wiſer now a- 'days, than to give up advantages which they 'have once gotten poſſeſſion of. As to that affair, 'therefore, I ſhould think it better to let it ſtand 'a little longer, till the neceſſity becomes more 'urgent, and then they will be glad to come into 'our terms, if it were not that the poor people 'may be ruined in the mean time; ſo that indeed

'I

'I am at a loſs what to advice your *Grace* to do, 'in ſo nice an affair.'

'*Why, let them be ruined then: it is not my fault*; 'nor is it my buſineſs to ſave them; nor will I part 'with a ſhilling to do it. Beſides, if they do ſuffer 'by the delay, thoſe who gave them this ſupply to pre-'vent their ruin, may give them another to repair 'it.'—'I cannot but admire your *Grace*'s judge-'ment in all things. You are above the fooliſh 'weakneſs of nature, and have the noble reſolu-'tion to ſee your own family periſh, rather than 'injure your own intereſt to relieve them. I 'ſhall obey your *Grace* in all things. I go now 'to *the Alley*, where buſineſs will ſoon begin.'—'*Do, honeſt Aminadab, and fear not, though I could* 'not procure an eſtabliſhment for your whole nation, 'as I would have done, I certainly will for your 'family, and that is enough for you. Your ſon ſhall 'be made a* BARONET *at leaſt; you have riches* 'enough to ſupport the title'

'Your *Grace* is very good; our people are all 'ſatisfied of your kind intentions: but, alas, that 'was a ſevere diſappointment to us, after coſting 'us ſo much money. The children of the Lord 'weep over it in their ſynagogues, and the daugh-'ters of *Sion* lament it in their ſongs; but my 'houſehold ſhall rejoice in thy favour, and the 'labours of my life prove my gratitude for it.'

Honeſt *Aminadab* was no ſooner gone, than there entered an agent, ſeemingly of another nature, this dealing in honour as the other did in money; but the difference between them was only in appearance, the end of both being ultimately the ſame.

'May it pleaſe your *Grace* (ſaid he, advance-'ing with due reverence and ceremony) I come

'to

'to wait upon you about that place in the ——: 'that gentleman, will not, indeed cannot, give one 'shilling more for it.'——'*Then, let the other 'have it; I will not lose five pence, much less five 'hundred pounds, for him.*'——'But, please 'your *Grace*, you know what grounds he has 'to expect it on; besides your promise which can-'not well be broken through, it was so posi-'tive.'——'*My promise was only conditional (in 'my own intention) that he should give me as much 'as another, and in no other sense will I keep it. 'As for his grounds of expectations I regard them 'not: let him make the most of them where he 'can.*'——'Just as your *Grace* pleases; I only 'took the liberty of speaking my own opinion, 'but always in submission to your's. Not but I 'must own I am apprehensive of this gentleman's 'resentment, though not immediately for myself, 'so much as for your *Grace*'s character, with 'which he may be provoked to make too free 'upon such an affair.'——'*Aye! that is liberty, 'your boasted English liberty, to speak disrespectfully 'of your superiors. But I despise whatever he can 'say: nor will I give up my own way for fear of his 'impertinence.*——'Very right, your *Grace* is 'very right. It were by no means fit that you 'should: but then it is to be considered, whether 'this breach of promise may not be attended with 'inconveniencies that may overbalance the ad-'vantage, as it may make others afraid to deal 'with you at another time.'——'*I will venture 'that: none come to me but for their own advantage, 'and while they can find that they will scarce stay 'away for punctilios. So, let me hear no more of 'this, but close with the other directly.*'

'Will

'Will not your *Grace* pleaſe to abate of your 'demand for that place in *Ireland?* I really fear 'you rate it too high.'——'*Not a ſhilling! I will 'not abate a ſhilling! ſurely I ought to know the 'value of things in* IRELAND *by this time! I have 'had ſufficient dealings there to teach me; it has 'been my privy purſe for many years.*'——'But 'what I fear is, that if your *Grace* does not fix 'upon ſome one directly, the Lord Deputy may, 'and that would diſappoint you; for this place 'has ever been immediately in his gift, and it 'would reflect a kind of diſhonour on him to 'give it up.'———'*Diſhonour, indeed! I am 'much concerned for his honour certainly! And as 'for his naming any one to contradict me, I believe 'he will be cautious how he does that. The example 'of his predeceſſor will teach him*———'However, if your *Grace* pleaſes, to prevent any diſputes, I will wait on him, and tell him that 'you have a friend, whom you deſign to recommend.'——'*With all my heart; you may if 'you will. But, as to the price, I will not abate 'one ſhilling, as I ſaid before. Do not I know that 'places in that country are either mere penſions, without any thing to do; or even neceſſity of ever governing there at all: or where that cannot be diſpenſed with from the nature of the place, that no 'learning, no abilities are requiſite. If it was here 'indeed, where knowledge in a profeſſion is abſolutely neceſſary to a place in it, there might be ſomething in higgling about the price, but for a coward 'to ſcruple paying for being made a general, or a 'blockhead a judge, there can be nothing more unreaſonable; and I will not hear another word about 'it*——*But what have you done about thoſe titles 'which I gave you to diſpoſe of?*'———'Really,

'I do

'I do not know what to say to your *Grace* about 'them: the bent of the people does not seem to 'incline to honours of late.'——'*No! I thought 'they were always as good as ready money; especi-'ally with those who have more money than sense, 'and think it easier to buy, than earn honour by 'merit. An* IRISH *title was the constant refuge of 'those sons of fortune, who not being born in the 'rank of gentlemen, or having forfeited it by their 'villainies, were desirous of changing their names 'for sonorous titles, to hide their disgrace, as it were, 'under an heap of honours, which in reality only 'make them the more exposed to the view, and con-'sequently to the censure, of the world.———But I 'find even that imaginary sense of honour is gone 'out of fashion, and the shadow is in no more request 'than the substance, at present. But, since they are 'grown such a drug, even make the most you can of 'them: sell them to whoever will buy; I shall take 'no exceptions to persons.'

'I shall certainly do the best I can for your 'Grace, though they have been so oddly given 'away of late, that I verily believe people are 'ashamed of taking them, for fear of being laughed 'at. Rattles are given to children, but titles to 'old men, to divert them; to some, in reward for 'not doing *the very worst* possibly in their power; 'and to others, for doing *nothing at all.*———. 'But, pray, has your *Grace* seen the old Colonel 'yet? he got his commission yesterday: I wish 'he may mean your *Grace* fairly.'———'*Why? 'sure, you do not imagine he can have the assurance 'to think of playing me a trick?*'———'I do not 'positively say so: but his behaviour has been 'very mysterious.'

Just

Juſt then a ſervant let her *Grace* know, that the very Colonel, of whom they were talking, deſired leave to wait upon her. 'I thought ſo (ſaid 'ſhe) ſhow him up: I thought he would not dare 'to triſle with *me!*

CHAP. VIII.

The Colonel puts the old ſoldier upon her Grace. Her rage and reſentment fall upon her agent. Her judicious application of the Biſhop's charity, with her tender concern for her friends abroad.

THE Colonel advanced to her *Grace* with the aſſurance of conſcious virtue ſparkling in his eye, though ſharpened by a caſt of indignation. 'I come (ſaid he) pleaſe your *Grace*, to return 'you my thanks for your favours: I have got my 'commiſſion, and had the honour, juſt now, to 'kiſs his majeſty's hand upon it. As your re-'commendation was more effectual to procure 'me this reward than the labours of a life which 'has not been undiſtinguiſhed in the ſervice, I 'thought it my duty to make your *Grace* this ac-'knowledgement, and to offer you any ſervice in 'the power of an honeſt heart, and no bad hand, 'in return.'—'Colonel (replied her *Grace)* I am 'glad it has been in my power to ſerve a man of 'your character, and I do not deſire any *ſuch* re-'turn.'——'I am much obliged to your *Grace* 'for your good opinion (returned he) which I hope 'I ſhall never forfeit. I thank God, my cha-'racter will not diſgrace your recommendation;

'nor ſhall you ever have reaſon to bluſh at the 'mention of my name. I have the honour to be 'your *Grace*'s moſt humble ſervant.'

'But, Colonel (ſaid the gentleman, the agent, 'who ſtood by) though her *Grace* has no occa- 'ſion for *ſuch a* return as you offer, having no 'quarrels to be fought, there is a return of an- 'other nature which you ſhould not forget, eſpe- 'cially as you promiſed it too.'——'Why 'look you, Sir (replied the colonel) as to that 'matter, it is moſt certain that I did, ſomething 'like, promiſe ſome ſuch thing, but when I have 'told the whole affair honeſtly to her *Grace*, I am 'ſure ſhe will be above demanding it.'—— 'Sir (ſaid her *Grace*) I do not deſire to hear any 'thing more about it! And I muſt tell you, that 'you have behaved like an old knave.'—— 'Say an old ſoldier, rather, madam (replied he, 'with ſome warmth) the other is a term I am not 'uſed to.'——'A nice diſtinction truely, and 'well worthy of a man of honour' (ſaid the 'agent with a ſneer.)—'Have a care, Sir, guard 'your expreſſions; my reſpect, my obligations to 'her *Grace* will make me bear any thing from 'her; but I muſt be ſo free as to tell you, that 'I have not the ſame ſentiments for you.'—— '*What are you going to make a riot in my apart-* '*ments!*'——'Not in the leaſt, madam; my 'reſpect for your *Grace* is a ſufficient ſecurity from 'that. I would only hint it to that gentleman, 'that he may not always have the protection of 'your *Grace*'s preſence; that is all, madam.'— '*You are a knaviſh old ruffian. But I ſhall take* '*care that you do not come off ſo.*'——'As your '*Grace* pleaſes for that. By the laws of my coun- 'try I cannot loſe my commiſſion while I do my 'duty,

'duty, nor will my gracious maſter be influenced
'to do me wrong, though, in the multiplicity of
'greater affairs, my ſervices, my hardſhips could
'not reach his eye. But as I would not bear the
'imputation of any crime, much more ſo black
'ones as diſhoneſty or ingratitude, you muſt
'give me leave to ſet this affair in a juſt light to
'your *Grace* now, eſpecially as I may never have
'another opportunity of doing myſelf that juſtice.

'Enraged almoſt to deſperation to find, that
'thirty years ſervice, the merits of which were
'often written in my blood, and ſtand recorded
'in theſe ſcars, were not ſufficient to procure
'me the regular advances of my rank, without a
'merit of another nature, I reſolved to quit the
'barren paths which I had ſo long purſued in vain,
'and try thoſe methods which I ſaw practiſed
'with ſucceſs by others: I therefore applied my
'ſelf to your *Grace*, who ſeemed ſtruck with my
'hardſhips, and promiſed me your favour, re-
'ferring me, for more particular information, to
'this gentleman, who would have lowered my
'ſenſe of your goodneſs, by loading it with terms
'which were not in my power to fulfil.

'Had your *Grace* mentioned them to me your-
'ſelf, I ſhould moſt certainly have owned my in-
'ability; but, coming from him, I looked upon
'them as the *fineſſe* of his own art, which it was
'not unjuſtifiable to return with a *feint* of mine;
'and therefore I gave an equivocal acquieſcence
'with his propoſal, for he dares not ſay I made a
'particular or poſitive promiſe of any thing.

'If I have done wrong in this I am miſtaken,
'and ſorry for it, but ſtill it is not within the
'article of war, that makes an error in judgment
'criminal, becauſe it was not againſt an enemy;

'but

'but by all the rules of war, and that is my profeſſion, and the only one I have ſtudied, it is allowable to oppoſe art to art, and try to foil the devil at his own weapons. This is what I have done; and the ſucceſs of this ſtratagem, which has effected by a *Coup de Main* what I had been making regular advances to ſo long in vain, proves the juſtneſs of my plan, and muſt extort your *Grace*'s approbation, when the paſſion raiſed by this gentleman's mercenary influence ſhall cool.'

Saying this the veteran marched off in triumph, leaving my miſtreſs and her agent ſtaring at each other in the ſtrongeſt ſurpriſe.

Her *Grace* found *utterance* firſt, and having no other object of her rage, turned all its violence upon her agent: 'So then (ſaid ſhe) after all, I find the old ruffian has outwitted you, with a general promiſe, or no promiſe at all, it ſeems, for you did not dare to contradict him. I thought, Sir, that I had cautioned you before againſt this very thing, and given you poſitive orders to take nothing but the money. But you ſhall pay for your neglect! you ſhall make good the loſs to me. As for the old ruffian, I will ſpeak to his general, and have him broke for a cheat. Talk to me of his ſervices! what are his ſervices to me! but I will have him broke; his example ſhall terrify others from attempting to abuſe me ſo again.'

'I wiſh it were proper or poſſible,' replied her agent, as ſoon as want of breath made her ſtop, 'for your *Grace* to have him puniſhed for his inſolence; but ſuch a tongue as his might lay matters too open, if once ſet a-going, for you ſee he is not to be over-awed to any thing. As for his commiſſion, there is no loſs in it;

'for

'for it was ordered for him before I applied; 'though I made him think it was obtained by 'your intereſt, to try what I could bring him 'to. Your *Grace* may be aſſured that I would 'not have taken any promiſe, had it been other-'wiſe; and I was juſt going to tell you this, 'when his coming prevented me.'—'It may be 'ſo (returned ſhe;) but I ſhall be better ſatiſ-'fied of it, before I give up your making good 'the loſs.'

The agent was relieved from further perſecution for that time, by the entrance of a *meſſenger*, who was going to *Germany*, and called to know if her *Grace* had any commands for her friends there.—'None but my good wiſhes and prayers 'for their deliverance (replied ſhe, with a deep 'drawn ſigh) which are conſtantly offered up 'for them. I am ſorry I am not able to ſend 'them any relief from myſelf; but I have no-'thing in my power, no places, no opportunities 'of getting any thing: theſe few pieces' (taking about a dozen guineas from her pocket, where ſhe had thrown the Biſhop's change of her note) are all, at preſent, in my poſſeſſion; give 'them to my dear mother, with my duty, and 'tell her I will ſend her the clothes ſhe wrote 'for, as ſoon as poſſible: and aſſure the reſt of 'my friends of my conſtanr attention to their 'intereſt.'

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice for that of an uſual attendant upon the great. The hiſtory of the unfortunate glyſter-pipe maker, who was like to be hanged for dirtying his fingers. An humble imitation of high life. Another change brings* CHRYSAL *into the poſſeſſion of a perſon of an extraordinary character Converſation between him and a very noted perſon. Let thoſe laugh that win.*

I Was, by this time, ſo ſick of *High Life*, that I was very glad of being one of the number her *Grace* gave to the *meſſenger*, as I ſaw no proſpect of pleaſure in ſuch a ſervice. He had no ſooner received her *Grace*'s commands, than he immediately went to the office for his diſpatches, where he was ſent on another errand, while they were getting ready.

This was to apprehend a poor wretch who ſold glyſter-pipes about the ſtreets, but being unable to get bread in his profeſſion, had fallen upon a ſcheme that he imagined might raiſe him to the notice of the world in the light of a ſtate criminal, and get him his hunger well ſatisfied, while he ſhould be an happy priſoner for offences which he imagined could not be attended with any bad conſequences.

Big with this project, he had entered into a correſpondence with ſome perſon abroad, of equal conſequence with himſelf, and to him communicated the *ſecret* intelligence which he daily picked up at coffee-houſes, or found in the public

lic news-papers, which his *great* friend was to forward to ſome *great perſon* in the ſervice of the enemy.

He had long continued this trade unnoticed, as he thought, though all his letters had been opened at the poſt-office, but the ſtuff contained in them was thought below regard; ſo that he began to fear that this ſcheme would turn to no account. But now ſome miſcarriages in publick affairs, alarming the reſentment of the people, making it evident that the ſecrets of the nation were betrayed, this inſignificant creature was thought of, and ordered to be taken into cuſtody.

Though this was the thing which he had always propoſed by his undertaking; to keep up the farce, he counterfeited the ſtrongeſt terrors, and put on every appearance of conſcious guilt, ſo far, that he had like to have over-acted his part, and fallen a ſacrifice to the law, which he only meant to illude: a juſt judgment on the baſe depravity of ſoul, that could deſcend to ſo iniquitous a ſcheme, as to trifle with his ſacred duty to his country, to ſupport an anxious, burthenſome being.

For his counterfeited fears not only gave weight to the appearances, which were before ſo very ſtrong againſt him, but alſo made it probable that he was guilty of more than he was at firſt even ſuſpected of: this juſtified the proſecuting him with the utmoſt ſeverity, and ſacrificing him to the indignant rage of the people, who called aloud for ſome victim, to atone for their reproachful loſſes.

The criminal ſoon perceived his error, and would have recanted all he had ſaid; but this

was not admitted him; his own confeſſions had confirmed the charge againſt him, and he was given up to the laws; to which, on the evidence of ſuch ſtrong appearances, though no intelligence could be proved againſt him, but what he ſhowed the publick authority mentioned before for, his life was declared a forfeit.

But the contemptibility of his ſtation and behaviour proved his ſafety, and mercy was extended to a wretch beneath vengeance, after he had ſerved the turn, and amuſed the people for his day.

I did not then ſtay in *England*, to ſee the event of this affair, but having learned it ſince my return, I thought it better to conclude the ſtory in this place together, than to interrupt my narrative with it, at another time.

It would be doing injuſtice to my maſter, to imagine that he had profited ſo little by his frequent intercourſe with perſons in genteel life, and particularly by her Grace's late example, as to think it neceſſary to apply the money ſhe had given him to any other uſe than his own: accordingly, when he was ſetting out, he gave me to his wife, for the ſupport of his family in his abſence.

But this ſpirited lady had a politer way of thinking, than to obey his directions, or deny herſelf any of the genteel pleaſures of life, for the ſake of ſuch a mean, domeſtick duty, as the care of a family. As ſoon therefore as his back was turned, ſhe put on her hat and cardinal, and poſted away to one of her moſt intimate acquaintances, a lady who kept a chandler's ſhop in the neighbourhood, to adviſe with her, about

ſettling

ſettling a party, at her houſe, for the next evening.

An affair of this importance required deliberation; accordingly, after tea, they retired into the bed-chamber, the parlour they ſat in being open to the ſhop, ſo that they were liable to be overheard by every one who ſhould come in, and there, over a comfortable glaſs of *right Hollands*, fixed upon the company, and ſettled the ceremonial, and fare of the entertainment. This great buſineſs being diſpatched, my miſtreſs returned home, and getting a gentleman who lodged in her houſe, at the expence of the ſtate, to write cards for her, ſent them by her huſband's aſſiſtant to the company, to invite them to play a game at cards, and ſpend the next evening with her, and then proceeded to put every thing in order for their reception.

Her great anxiety, and the preparation ſhe made, raiſed my curioſity not a little, to ſee the vanity and vice of the higher ranks of life mimicked by ſuch a ſet; but I was diſappointed at that time, being paid away to a tavern-keeper, next morning, for wine and brandy for the occaſion.

My new maſter was a ſtriking inſtance of the inconſiſtency of life, and the hypocriſy of the human heart: he had for many years kept one of the moſt notorious brothel-taverns in the town; but not content with this publick inſult to the laws, in defiance of every ſenſe of ſhame, he at the ſame time profeſſed himſelf a reformer of religion; and while the groſſeſt ſcenes of riot and debauchery were carrying on openly in his houſe, was chaunting hymns in a conventicle, and groaning in ſpirit, for the wickedneſs of the

times, with a face as meagre and mortified as the picture of famine. I see you wonder at such a palpable contradiction, but that proceeds from ignorance of life, every view of which shows instances as gross as this; the gaming devotee, the pensioned patriot, and the drunken priest, being equally offensive to common sense and reason. As for my master, he had as powerful motives for his conduct as the greatest of them all. Poverty made him, in his early youth, turn pandar to such an house as he now kept, when the demure sanctity of his looks screened him so effectually from suspicion, that he was able to make acquaintances in families, and accomplish seductions, which no other of his trade dared to attempt. By these means, he soon acquired a sum of money sufficient to set up this house for himself; when his character immediately brought him into business that in a little time made his fortune; but, for this success he was chiefly indebted to a master-stroke of superior genius; for having observed in the mystery of his profession, that there is no private sinner like a publick saint, as soon as he thus rose above the drudgery of business, and, from porter, became master of a tavern, he associated himself with a set of reformers, who went preaching up and down the town, at whose meetings he had an opportunity of finding out new faces for his best customers, and making acquaintances with the leaders, who, observing his discretion, soon admitted him into their mystery, and made his house the scene of their secret meetings, to settle their business, laugh at the follies they lived by, and practise the vices which they preached against. Such success might be thought to have satisfied his avarice,

avarice, but the habit has taken ſuch hold of him that he cannot deſiſt, and he now does from inclination, what was at firſt the effect of neceſſity.

I ſhould not have dwelt ſo long upon his character, but that it ſerves to explain the ways of the world, and prove the folly of an opinion, generally received among men, that they can change their courſe of life whenever they pleaſe; and as ſoon as their end is anſwered, and they have heaped up a fortune, by the iniquity of a profeſſion, quit it at once, and live virtuouſly upon the earnings of vice.

The evening after I came into his poſſeſſion, the high prieſt of the conventicle called upon him, to ſpend an hour in ſpiritual converſation. After examining into his progreſs in grace, and the increaſe of his faith, and aſſurance of election (for ſuch is the power of cuſtom, and the pleaſure of cheating the world, that they practiſe the art even upon each other) he told him that he had a moſt particular occaſion, for his moſt private room that evening. 'For (ſaid he, ſhaking him 'by the hand) my friend, as I have found, by 'experience, that the only way to foil the Devil, 'is at his own weapons, I have appointed *Momus* 'the ballad-ſinger, whoſe attack upon me has 'made ſuch a noiſe, to meet me here this evening, 'and make up the affair over a glaſs of wine.'— 'In truth (anſwered my maſter, a good deal ſurpriſed) your reverence's meekneſs and patience 'muſt needs be very great; or you could not 'bear ever to mention him, in any degree of 'chriſtian charity and benevolence, after ſo outrageous and groſs an attack as he has made 'upon you, without the leaſt perſonal provoca-

'tion; for what was that to him, what you said or 'did to the rest of the world, his morals or reli-'gion were in no danger! But you were born to 'be an example to the age, and a shining light, 'to guide the steps of the faithful.'

'A truce with this canting now, my friend, '(replied the Doctor) and let us talk a few 'words like men of the world. Your proved 'fidelity and prudence making me not scruple to 'reveal the whole mystery of the ministry to you, 'I will let you into the secret of this affair. 'You must know, then, that I have, for some 'time, perceived the humour of the people be-'gin to waver greatly, and the fervency of their 'devotion to cool, in spite of all I could do to 'keep it up, by preaching, fasting, prayer, and 'lamentation, by crying up my own piety, and 'the wonderful effect of my spiritual labours; 'it was necessary, therefore, to have recourse 'to some expedient, to prevent their falling 'off entirely, and accordingly I pitched upon 'this, which has exceeded my expectations: for, 'instead of making my people ashamed of com-'ing to me, it has piqued their pride, and now 'they resolve to show, that they scorn as much 'to be laughed, as preached, out of their own 'way. This, my friend, is the way of the world, 'which, since we cannot in reality mend, we 'must only strive to make the best of. If I could 'carry on my business without this assistance, I 'most certainly would never have entered into 'such a confederacy, any more than you would 'keep a brothel, and entertain whores and rogues, 'if you could make equal profit by any other 'company.'

'I am

'I am much obliged to your reverence (returned my maſter) for putting me in any degree of compariſon with yourſelf; but it is too great an honour! I act in a low ſphere; but I ſtill have the pleaſure to think, that, even in my poor way, I contribute ſomething towards your great work; as there could not be ſo many converts to reſort to you for ſpiritual comfort, if there were no places of this kind to encourage vice and debauchery. You ſee, Sir, that I enter into the ſpirit of your deſign, and deſerve your confidence, by this return of mine. There are ſecrets in all profeſſions; and as you have entered into a league with your profeſſed enemy, that you may be able to play into each other's hands, ſo I, notwithſtanding the probity of my profeſſion, have a private underſtanding with all the ladies of pleaſure who reſort to this houſe, who, in return for their being brought into good company, never fail to enhance expence, and countenance every impoſition of falſe meaſures, falſe charges, and a thouſand others, by which a prudent man turns the folly of the world to his own advantage. As to this confederacy between you and the ballad-ſinger, I own I never ſuſpected the leaſt of it; and, indeed, I ſtill am at a loſs to think how you could bear the perſonal reflections, eſpecially, which he has thrown upon you. What was the misfortune of your form to him, that he ſhould call you Dr. *Hunch-Back?*'—'Why that is true enough (anſwered the Doctor:) in that he exceeded my directions; and to call him to account for it, is part of the buſineſs of this appointment. Every thing was ſettled between

'us. We have hitherto met at our friend Mrs. '*Brimſtone*'s, who firſt negociated the affair be-'tween us, and conſented to take her ſhare of 'the ridicule, to advance the common cauſe. 'She will be here to-night too, ſo that we ſhall 'have an agreeable ſet. I believe I hear him 'juſt come in. I directed him to enquire for 'number one; do you ſhow him into the pri-'vate room, and when the coaſt is clear I'll 'join you.'

CHAP. X.

CHRYSAL'*s maſter ſtarts at his own apparition. Interview between the Doctor and a noted ballad-ſinger. The hiſtory of a famous ballad. All trades alike.*

THE perſon my maſter was ſent to meet had ſomething ſo uncommon in his appearance, as inſtantly ſtruck my attention. Every paſſion of the human heart was printed in his face ſo ſtrongly, that he could at pleaſure diſplay it in all its force, while his every look and geſture turned ſome vice or folly into ridicule. 'You 'enquire for number one, Sir!' (ſaid my maſter, bowing with the profoundeſt reſpect.) 'I do, Sir' (anſwered the other, returning his bow, aſſuming his look, and imitating his voice, in a manner that would have extorted laughter from deſpair) 'enquire for number one.'

Though my maſter was no ſtranger to his talents, which he had often ſeen him diſplay at the expence of others, this perſonal application of

of them to himſelf threw him into ſuch confuſion, that, in ſpite of his long-practiſed aſſurance, a bluſh broke feebly through his unimpaſſioned, lifeleſs face, and he had ſcarce power to ſhow him into the room. The ballad-ſinger ſeeing that he had him at command, would not purſue his advantage any farther, at that time, for fear of frightening him away; but putting on the exact countenance, and mimicking the voice and manner of the Doctor, 'I am come, my friend and brother in the Lord '(ſaid he) to enquire into thy ſpiritual eſtate, to 'give thee ghoſtly advice, and commune with 'thee, for a ſhort ſpace, for our mutual edifica-'tion.'———The ſurpriſe and manner of this addreſs had ſuch an effect upon my maſter, that he could not refrain burſting into laughter; and immediately recovered from the confuſion into which the ridicule of himſelf had thrown him.

They were ſcarce ſeated, when the Doctor entered, and addreſſing himſelf to the ſtranger, 'I am glad to ſee you, Sir,' (ſaid he, taking him by the hand) 'and heartily congratulate you on 'your ſucceſs. You ſee, I was not miſtaken in 'my judgement. I knew what would take with 'the taſte of the public. There is nothing pleaſes 'them ſo much as a little profaneneſs, and ri-'dicule of Religion: a fling at the Clergy never 'fails to raiſe a laugh.'———'I acknowledge 'your judgement, Sir' (anſwered the other, raiſing up his ſhoulders, rolling his eyes, and echoing every cadence of the Doctor's voice) 'and 'thank you for your congratulation; but I muſt 'beg leave to differ in opinion with you, as to 'the cauſe of my ſucceſs, for I have never had 'the leaſt fling at the Clergy, nor been guilty

'of profaneneſs, or ridiculing religion, in my 'ballad; the abuſe of religion by hypocriſy, 'and making the profeſſion of virtue a ſanction 'for the practice of vice, were the objects of my 'ſatire; and the reception it has met with from 'the publick ſhows that the people have a proper 'ſenſe of ſuch vices.'

The Doctor was ſo ſtruck at the reflection of himſelf, when the other began to ſpeak, that he ſtarted, in the utmoſt aſtoniſhment, and was unable to interrupt him till he had finiſhed his diſcourſe, which elſe he certainly would have done, while my maſter ſtood almoſt convulſed with laughter. But his triumph was not long; for the ballad-ſinger turning ſhort upon him, and inſtantaneouſly aſſuming his cadaverous appearance, and bowing in the ſame manner, 'And you, Sir (con-'tinued he, addreſſing himſelf to him) muſt have 'had ample experience, in the courſe of your bu-'ſineſs, that the taſte of the town inclines quite 'another way, the moſt profligate in practice 'being the moſt pious in profeſſion.'

This ſudden tranſition from the Doctor reſtored him to his ſpirits, who in his turn could not avoid pointing with his finger, and laughing moſt immoderately at the ſilly look of my maſter, though he was not quite ſo much abaſhed as he had been before.

As ſoon as the Doctor could ſpeak, 'How-'ever I may doubt your opinion (ſaid he to 'the ballad-ſinger) I acknowledge the irreſiſt-'ible force of your powers of ridicule, and beg 'a ceſſation of them for a moment, till we 'talk of our buſineſs. I will not diſpute about 'the cauſe of your ſucceſs, but I think you need

'not

'not have fallen upon my perſon. My profeſſions 'and practice ſurely were enough, with your own 'exaggerations! Why, then, need you give me 'the opprobrious nick-name of *Hunch-Back*, 'which has ſpread ſo, that I ſhall never get rid 'of it? The very children haunt me with it, 'as I go along the ſtreets.'

'Good Heavens (anſwered the other) how ſub-'ject are the wiſeſt men to the weakneſs of vani-'ty! I ſhould have thought that you were long 'ſince proof to any thing the world could ſay 'of you, or you would have given up your trade 'before now. As to my calling you this name, 'you muſt know that the whole ſucceſs of our 'ſcheme depended upon it; for if I had not 'turned the ridicule againſt your perſon, the 'taſte of the publick is ſo groſs, that I might have 'laughed alone at your opinions. But what 'ſucceſs have you had? Do you find your flock 'gather upon this attack on their ſhepherd?'— 'Why, pretty well (replied the Doctor) pretty 'well. They ſeem to ſhow a proper ſenſe of 'it. As for me, I appear affected at it in a 'very extraordinary manner, that is ſolely upon 'your account; and to convince them and all 'the world of the ſtrength of my charity, I de-'ſign to-morrow to offer up prayers for your 'converſion, as being in a dangerous ſtate of 'ſalvation, and then, on the merit of that, to 'propoſe a ſubſcription for the relief of two or 'three families, whom your example has led into 'ruin.'——'Bravo, Doctor (interrupted the 'other) tell me of profaneneſs again! But I hope 'I am to have a ſhare in the ſubſcription, as it is 'to be propoſed on my account; at leaſt, you 'will let me aſſiſt in the diſtribution of it.'——

'Take

'Take care, my friend! (returned the Doctor:) 'another word of that kind, and I declare off 'the connection. I will have nobody pry into 'my conduct, or interfere with my buſineſs. I 'did not aſk any part of your gains, though you 'got ſo much in every company where you ſung 'your ballad; nor did I ſpeak a word in behalf 'of the other poor ballad-ſingers you picked up 'about the ſtreets, and ſet to ſing for you, though 'the wretches complained that you ſtarved 'them.'

The ballad-ſinger perceiving that he had touched upon a tender point, thought proper to wave it, as he did not chooſe to break off ſo advantageous a connection. 'As to that (ſaid he) 'I did but jeſt. I never interfere with any 'man's matters. But that's true! I have bad news 'to tell you! *The clerk of the pariſh* ſent me 'word yeſterday, that, underſtanding I ſung my 'ballad to a pſalm-tune, he let me know, that 'I muſt change my note directly, or he would order the beadles to whip me out of the pariſh, if 'ever I preſumed to ſing there again; and to 'mend the matter, at the ſame time ordered me 'to make uſe of an old, black-guard tune, which 'he ſent me, the vulgar ſtupidity of which blunts 'the edge of the ridicule, which has never turned 'againſt the tune itſelf, but ſolely againſt the proſtitution of it; which can never be ſo effectually attacked, as by repeating the manner exactly in which it is ſung. But, where is our 'friend *Brimſtone?* I expected to have met her 'here.'

Juſt as he ſaid this, my maſter was called out, where he found a venerable Matron, ſupported

by

by two chairmen, who enquiring in a feeble voice for number *one*, he directly ſhowed her in to the company.

CHAP. XI.

A venerable Matron completes the company. The curtain lifted up, and ſeveral unexpected diſcoveries made. MOMUS *plays ſucceſſively upon Dr.* HUNCH-BACK, *and Mother* BRIMSTONE. *After various diſaſters, the evening is concluded in character.*

THE Matron, whom my maſter was handing in to his friends, diſplayed one of thoſe figures, which loſe by the moſt forcible deſcription. Her face, though broken by debauchery and diſeaſe, preſerved the remains of a moſt pleaſing ſweetneſs and beauty; but her body was bloated by intemperance almoſt out of every reſemblance of the human form. She wore on her head a richly laced cap, over which, half a dozen fine handkerchiefs almoſt concealed a piece of greaſy flannel. Her gown, of the richeſt ſilk, flowed looſely round her, under a velvet cloak, lined with ermine; while her legs and feet, ſwoln out of all ſhape, and too tender to bear any ligature, were wrapped up in flannels.

My maſter received this amiable creature from the chairmen; and ſtooping under as much as he was able to bear of the burthen of her body, aſſiſted her to limp into the room. The contraſt between her and the ſhabby ſkeleton of her ſupporter was ſo ſtrikingly ridiculous, that the

moment they appeared, *Momus* burſt into an immoderate fit of laughter; and turning to the Doctor (who was not much leſs affected, though practice had given him ſuch a maſtery over the muſcles of his face, that they never betrayed the paſſions of his heart) 'Behold (ſaid he) the bleſ-'ſed fruit of thy miniſtry, and rejoice! See how 'the ſpirit aſſiſteth the fleſh to ſtruggle with the 'infirmities of nature.'——And then, waddling up to her, in her own gait, 'Dear mother '(addreſſing himſelf to her) give me your other 'arm; reſt a little part of your weight, an hun-'dred or two, upon me! Come! Let me help 'you into that great chair!'——'Oh! oh! oh! 'my poor bones! (exclaimed ſhe.) How you pull 'me along! You will tear me to pieces! Oh! 'oh!'—'Never fear, mother! Never fear that! '(anſwered he.) Crazy as your carcaſe is, it will 'ſtick a little longer together. Your friends are 'not ready for you yet.'——'Go! go! you're 'a wicked creature, a profane wretch.'——— 'Dear Doctor! I thought I ſhould never ſee you 'more! I had a ſad night of it; a moſt ſad one, 'indeed. But the Spirit comforted me. Oh! if 'it were not for the comforts of the Spirit, there 'would be no bearing the pains of this life! I 'was purely when you left me! Your pious 'converſation had comforted my heart; and the 'other bottle we cracked together raiſed my ſpi-'rits ſo, that I forgot all my pains. But I 'was not to be ſo happy long! Satan envied 'me, and threw temptation in my way!——— 'This wicked imp, and half a dozen of his 'roaring companions, came in upon me, juſt 'as you went out at the back-door! Well!'

'to

'to be ſure they have a great deal to anſwer for! 'I was juſt beginning to read my pious exhorta- 'tion you left me, when in they came, ſnatched 'the book out of my hand, and, calling for 'the Ladies, inſiſted on my ſitting with them; 'ſo, as you know I always loved innocent mirth, 'I could not refuſe. But, alas! I paid dearly for 'it this morning! My poor bones! And then 'my head! My poor head is quite gone, quite 'gone! I can bear nothing!———Oh, what 'a difference there is between ſpending an 'evening in edifying converſation over a ſober 'bottle, with a pious friend or two, and theſe 'ranting riotous ſcenes! though they behaved ſo 'like gentlemen, and were ſo good company, 'that there was no leaving them! But, it is all 'folly! all vanity! I am reſolved I will leave it 'off! I will not follow it much longer, I am re- 'ſolved! I'll wean myſelf from this world, and 'think of nothing but a new life!———I hope 'the Baronet won't uſe poor *Betſey* ill! I did not 'like his refuſing to taſte the ratafia! I ſhould 'be ruined if any thing ailed her! She is more 'enquired for than all the ladies in the houſe.— 'And my Lord—He is ſweet company. But 'it is a pity he is ſo wicked! He was going to 'burn my book of devout exerciſes; and then, 'that profane ſong of your's! what need he ſing 'that! I wonder what pleaſure people can find 'in profaneneſs! Where there is any enjoyment, 'it is another thing; but this is being wicked 'for wickedneſs ſake. It is a great pity, for he 'is a very generous, fine gentleman! He gave '*Poll* ten guineas this morning! He is very fond 'of *Poll*; he always has her when *Betſey* is 'engaged. Oh! oh! oh! ſhall I ever get rid of

'theſe

'theſe pains! When ſhall I be happy in Hea-
'ven?'———

While ſhe was running on thus, the Doctor was buſied in writing a letter to himſelf, as from a family in diſtreſs, for whom he intended to ſollicit a ſubſcription the next day from his congregation; and my maſter was laying glaſſes on the table, and drawing the corks out of ſeveral bottles; ſo that *Momus* alone attended to her, by the ſignificant archneſs of whoſe look it was eaſy to perceive, that he was laying up a fund for future entertainment, and would not have interrupted her, had ſhe continued her diſcourſe never ſo long; but the Doctor's turning to the bottle put a ſtop to her, and introduced a general converſation.

'I am ſorry, my friend (ſaid he, addreſſing
'himſelf to her) to hear you complain ſo! I left
'you in a bleſſed temperature of mind and body
'laſt night, but I much fear that the intemper-
'ance you mentioned muſt have equally diſturbed
'both. The moſt pious man knoweth not what
'folly he uttereth when he is full of wine! A
'little is good, and rejoiceth the heart; but too
'much marreth the underſtanding, and letteth
'looſe the ſecrets of the wiſe.'——'As for
'that there, dear Doctor, never fear me! Since
'the bleſſed hour of my *call*, I have never diſ-
'cloſed one ſecret about the matter: I never
'mention a word of it.———But, Doctor, what
'did you do with the young Lady whom you
'would ſee home laſt night? I would not refuſe
'you, to be ſure; but I hope you have not put
'any more idle notions in her head! She is very
'young, and likely to do a great deal of buſineſs,

'there-

'therefore her *call* need not come this great 'while! It will be time enough ſome years hence! 'I had a great deal of trouble to bring her to; and 'now, if you have ſpoiled her, I ſhall have all 'the work to do over again. Nobody knows the 'trouble and expenſe I am at for the ſervice of 'the publick—Nobody knows! If it was not for 'me, gentlemen would be forced to take up with 'common ſervant-maids, and ſuch low-lived crea-'tures; but I provide gentlewomen for them: 'Ladies of birth and education! and yet I am 'not regarded! Nobody thanks me! This is poor 'encouragement to ſerve the publick, very poor, 'indeed! But virtue is its own reward! that's 'my comfort. I do the beſt I can; and if I do 'not receive a proper return, that is not my fault! 'Let the world anſwer for it! I do my part; and 'ſo my mind is at eaſe.'——

'That you do! (ſaid *Momus*, while ſhe ſtopped 'to drink) that you do! Your diligence never 'ſlackens! Come, fill your glaſs. Here's to the 'reformation of manners, a work that we all la-'bour in alike.'——'By your leave, good Sir '(interrupted the Doctor, with a look and tone 'of offended importance) not all alike, I preſume! 'I believe you will allow, that there is ſome dif-'ference between your profeſſion and mine, at 'leaſt.'——'So then (anſwered *Momus*) you are 'returning to the old point! I thought I had ſaid 'enough to you on that head before! Difference! 'aye! that there is indeed; but perhaps you are 'not ſenſible in whoſe favour that difference is! 'I ſing a ſong that makes people laugh; and put 'vice and folly out of countenance, by ſhowing 'them in a ridiculous light, and this only for a

'trifling

'trifling pittance of that money which they de-
'vote to mere pleaſure. But you, by drawing hor-
'rours that never exiſted out of your own ima-
'gination, and preaching up doctrines impoſ-
'ſible to practiſe, frighten your poor deluded fol-
'lowers out of every enjoyment of their lives,
'and pillage them of the money that ſhould ſupport
'their families and pay their debts, under pretence
'of imaginary charities! This is the difference
'between us.'——'Good lack! good lack! (in-
'terrupted the ſage matron) how can people be
'ſuch fools as to fall out thus about nothing!
'What ſignifies it where the difference lies, ſo
'you can both do your buſineſs? It is juſt the
'ſame thing as if my landlord here, and I, ſhould
'enter into a diſpute about the reputation of our
'houſes. I thought I had made you both promiſe
'never to mention this matter any more! Come,
'Doctor! here's proſperity to all our buſineſs,
'without any ſuch fooliſh diſtinctions.'—

The judgement of this mediation was too plain to admit of any diſpute. The competitors filled their glaſſes, and, ſhaking hands very cordially, drank their friend's toaſt. 'Well, now there is
'ſome pleaſure in this (continued ſhe:) things are
'like to go on well, when all parties agree; but
'when ſome people fall out——you know the
'reſt of the ſaying——But, my friend *Mo-*
'mus, I have news for you! That ſtory of the
'young Lady, that you put in your ballad, has
'anſwered juſt as I ſaid. The world thought it
'would blow me up; but I knew better! I ne-
'ver had a greater run of company in my life than
'to enquire into that affair; and they all of the
'right ſort—your ſecret, grave, old, rich culls,
'juſt fit to do buſineſs with. At firſt, I always
'deny

'deny it with the ſtrongeſt oaths and imprecations, and rail at you for inventing ſuch a ſcandalous ſtory; but afterwards, as if I am put off my guard by the liquor, I ſeem to place a confidence in their profeſſions of ſecrecy and friendſhip, and, with many tears, own the whole; that is, ſo far as to my having the Lady in my power; and then the conſequence is, that they all intreat me to let them ſee her (that is, ſingly, for ſuch chaps always come alone;) when, ſuch is the pleaſure in debauching virtue, that, beſides making me a handſome preſent for my kindneſs, they leave no temptation untried to prevail upon the Lady, whom they generally take to themſelves upon a genteel ſettlement; by which means I have got a pretty ſum, and have beſides had an opportunity of providing for near a dozen of my women, who were too well known upon the town to do any thing in the publick way; for this kind of cuſtomers have too great a regard for their characters, ever to mix in company that might undeceive them! So, you ſee, Doctor, that I do not forget your inſtructions of doing all the good in my power; and ſure it is no ſmall matter to reſcue ſo many poor women, who were no longer capable of getting a genteel livelihood for themſelves, from want and miſery, and getting them a comfortable ſettlement for life, ſo that they have nothing to do now, but attend to you, and make their peace with heaven.———Come! here's my ſervice to you, my friend *Momus*; and if you can think of any other ſtory of me, that can ſerve your turn, and get off another ballad, never ſpare me! I'll forgive you.'——'And

'ſo

'ſo will I too (added the Doctor) though he 'ſhould call me a worſe name than *Hunch-back!* 'Let them laugh who win. While our railing at 'each other in publick anſwers our own ends, 'we were fools to drop it; as to the deceit in 'it, it is a virtue; for ſure it is better to live 'thus in friendſhip and charity with all mankind, 'than to be the real enemies we ſeem; and ſo, 'Sir, here's my hearty ſervice to you. And let 'us purſue our works in concert, without any 'more of theſe broils. So let us drink about, 'for an hour or two; for I muſt leave you early, 'being obliged to write an exhortation for the 'old Ducheſs, which I muſt carry her early in 'the morning, when ſhe deſigns to viſit her 'couſin, the Colonel, who is under ſentence 'of death in Newgate, for murther; not that I 'think either that, or her preaching, will have 'any effect upon him; but ſhe will try: and I 'do not care to diſoblige her, as ſhe is not only 'a good ſubſcriber on all occaſions, but alſo a 'credit to our conventicle, which would never 'have riſen into ſuch eſteem with the people, if 'ſome perſons of quality had not brought it into 'faſhion.'——'Why, aye to be ſure, there is a 'great deal in that (added the Matron:) faſhion 'is a powerful thing. If it was not for that, I 'could never do the buſineſs I do. But, ſince the 'nobility have made it a faſhion to marry their 'miſtreſſes, there is no great difficulty in bring-'ing a private gentleman's daughter into our 'way of life, as it gives her the only chance ſhe 'can poſſibly have, of making her fortune, and 'becoming a Lady; for, as to the example of 'thoſe few, who married Ladies of virtue for 'mere love, it was too old-faſhioned, and ro-

'mantick,

'mantick, to have any influence. But that's true, 'Doctor, I forgot to mention ſomething to you 'laſt night, that has given me great concern! 'How could you be ſo indiſcreet as to accom-'pany that highwayman to Tyburn the other 'day? And then to take his hand, and kiſs it, 'before all the people! Fie! it turns my ſtomach 'to think of it! I do not know how you can ex-'pect any lady will ever let you kiſs her lips after 'ſuch a filthy action. Beſides, it is a ſcandal to 'all your congregation, that you ſhould appear 'ſo familiar with ſuch low-lived creatures, and 'ſeems a kind of encouragement to their crimes. 'If you had heard what remarks two or three 'ladies, who called at my houſe yeſterday even-'ing, made upon it, I am ſure you would never 'do it again.'——'Go to, woman! Go to! '(anſwered the Doctor, with a contemptuous 'look) take the beam out of thine own eye be-'fore you find fault with the mote in your neigh-'bour's. What highwayman's crimes are equal 'to your's! The greateſt danger of ſcandal that 'I ever ran has been in condeſcending to keep 'company with you. In that, indeed, I may be 'ſaid, with too great an appearance of truth, to 'encourage the baſeſt crimes.'——

The Matron, who, with all her prudence, was of a warm temper, could not brook ſuch an inſult as this, even from her ſpiritual guide, but catching up her glaſs, in the madneſs of her rage, which had deprived her of the power of utterance, ſhe flung it at his head with all her ſtrength, and with ſuch an unlucky aim, that it felled him to the ground——'Woman! (ſputtered ſhe, as 'ſoon as her paſſion permitted her to articulate a 'word.) Woman! Call your women about you!

'I

'I ſcorn your words, you canting, hypocritical, 'vicious wretch, who, under the appearance of 'ſanctity and religion, cheat the credulous fools 'that mind you. You condeſcend to keep me 'company! you! a creature who would never 'have been taken notice of had it not been for 'me! Did not I point you out the perſons pro-'per for you to work upon? Was it not I that 'introduced you to thoſe very people of quality 'that now make you give yourſelf ſuch airs? 'Were they not moſt of them my acquaint-'ances, and even indebted to me for the rank 'they now enjoy? I'll make you know your-'ſelf, you ſcoundrel, I will! I'll expoſe you to 'the world, and then ſee who will go to your 'conventicle, or ſubſcribe to your ſham chari-'ties! I'll make you know how to treat your 'ſuperiors for the future.'——

While the enraged Matron thus vented her fury, *Momus* and my maſter raiſed the Doctor from the ground, in a pickle not to be deſcribed. The glaſs had been thrown with ſuch ſtrength, that, had not his ſkull been of a comfortable thickneſs, his labours would have been at an end. However, it had made ſuch a gaſh upon his temple, that he was in a moment in a gore of blood. The ſight of this terrified them all! The Matron fainted (or pretended to faint) away; my maſter ran to get a napkin to wipe off the blood, while *Momus* ſupported the Doctor in his chair; but the firſt ſight of the wound convincing him that it was not dangerous, he reſolved to increaſe the accident to that diverſion which was the great purſuit of his life.

'Good

'Good Heaven! (ſaid he in a low voice, as if 'ſpeaking to himſelf, and with all the appearance 'of diſtreſs.) What will become of us all! We 'ſhall all be ruined by this unfortunate affair, even 'if we eſcape the death which inevitably awaits 'the wretched murthereſs.'—'O Sir! (ſaid the 'Doctor, alarmed almoſt to deſpair) What do you 'think? Am I a dead man? Speak, I conjure 'you; give me ſome hopes!'——'Alas, my 'friend! I wiſh I could; but I muſt not flatter a 'man in your condition! If you have any con-'cerns in this life to ſettle, delay not a moment. 'This horrid fracture in your ſkull threatens im-'mediate death. Heavens! (ſtooping, and pre-'tending to look earneſtly) how his brain works!' —'O what ſhall I do! (exclaimed the terrified 'wretch.) I cannot die! I am not fit to die! 'Oh! that I had followed ſome honeſt trade, and 'never taken to this of preaching! I might then 'have earned honeſt bread as my forefathers did, 'and eſcaped this miſerable death, and the more 'horrid fate that awaits me! What ſhall I do? 'What will become of me? How can I even pray 'to that God, whom I have ſo often provoked by 'my hypocriſy and crimes!'———

My maſter, by this time, had wiped the wound; and ſeeing, that though it bled ſo violently, from the number of little veſſels that are in that part, there was no fracture of the ſkull, and therefore no danger in it, 'Be comforted, 'Sir (ſaid he) you have time enough to prepare 'yourſelf for death! I'll inſure you from any 'danger this time!'—'How, my deareſt, beſt 'friend! (ſaid the Doctor, catching his hand, 'and kiſſing it in extaſy) Is my life ſafe? Is not 'the wound mortal?'—'Mortal! no! nor even

'dangerous, if the ſurgeons do not make it ſo! 'Give me leave to put a plaiſter to it, which I 'always have in readineſs in the houſe, in caſe 'of accidents, as gentlemen often quarrel for 'their women in their liquor; and I'll engage 'that it ſhall give you no further trouble. Many 'a guinea have I got by it; for, when any ſuch 'thing happens, I immediately ſlip on a full 'trimmed ſuit, a bag wig, and a ſword, which 'a ſurgeon once pawned to me for a debt of two 'guineas, and up I go, do the job, take my 'fee, and come away as good a ſurgeon as the 'beſt! Never fear, Sir: I'll inſure you from 'this ſcratch.'

The conſolation which this news gave the Doctor is not to be expreſſed. He hugged and kiſſed his dear friend, till he made him in as bloody a condition as himſelf, and in the joy of his heart even forgave the cauſe of his fears, who had all this time counterfeited a ſwoon. But *Momus*, who ſaw his ſport with the Doctor thus cut ſhort, ſoon brought her to herſelf; for taking a glaſs of brandy, as if to hold to her noſe, in the affected aukwardneſs of his hurry and confuſion he ſpilled it all over her face, and then taking a bit of burnt paper, to try what that would do, he deſignedly neglected to blow it out, and ſo, holding it to her noſe, ſet the brandy he had ſpilled upon her face on fire. This inſtantly awoke her from her ſwoon. She ſhrieked out, when he, in the ſame affected confuſion, flung the baſon of bloody water, in which the Doctor's wound had been waſhed, full in her face. This, indeed, quenched the flame, but then it put her in a condition as dirty and diſagreeable as that of my maſter or the Doctor; the conſequence of which was,

was, that the Doctor could not refrain from burſting out a laughing. 'Well, my friend (ſaid he, 'taking her by the hand) it is but juſt that you 'ſhould ſhare in the effects of your own raſhneſs. 'But, let there be no more of it. We have both 'been in fault perhaps; and ſo let us only be more 'cautious for the future. What I have ſuffered 'was done by deſign, and had like to have been 'attended with dreadful conſequences; your's is 'all accidental and trifling.'——

While the Doctor was thus piouſly making peace, my maſter was cleaning himſelf, and ſetting the room to rights. *Momus* aſſiſted the Matron to cram half a dozen napkins down her boſom, to dry the water he had bathed her with, which he performed with ſo well acted an anxiety and care, that even ſhe was deceived, and attributed all that had happened to her to his confuſion; and being glad to get ſo well off an affair that might have ended ſo much worſe, ſhe complied with the Doctor's advances to a general reconciliation, and ſo all things were reſtored to their former harmony. As to the Doctor's wound, by a ready preſence of mind, he found a way to make an advantage of it, by telling his congregation next day, that he had received it from ſome of *Momus*'s gang, who had attempted to aſſaſſinate him, in revenge of the contempt into which he had brought their maſter.

Matters being thus happily ſettled, the reſt of the night was devoted to mirth, and concluded with a ſong in character by each of the company, of which *Momus*'s was the moſt humorous, my maſter's the groſſeſt, the Matron's the looſeſt, and the Doctor's the moſt daringly profane; perhaps to obliterate the remembrance of his late re-

ligious qualms. After this, the company broke up, when the Doctor, having occasion for some money early in the morning, borrowed a couple of pieces from my master, among which I was, who lent them very unwillingly, and then returned to bed to his bar-maid; for he had too genteel notions of life to marry.

CHAP. XII.

The Doctor pays a visit to an useful friend. The mystery of controversy. He waits upon her Grace with a pious exhortation for her friend. CHRYSAL *enters into the service of her Grace. Her disappointment in her visit to the Prison. Her Grace's character.*

THOUGH it was late when the company broke up, my new master, who never neglected business for pleasure, did not forget the *Exhortation* which he was to carry to her Grace the next morning. Not that he was at the trouble of composing it himself; his time was too precious to be employed so: the more important cares of his flock, which he could not entrust to any other, as visiting his great proselytes, receiving and distributing charity, and his incessant exercise of all the sacerdotal functions, scarce allowed him time for the necessary refreshments of nature, and would have been deemed an intolerable burthen, had they been enjoined by the most express revelation of the divine will, though ambition, avarice, and the pleasure of deceit, made him undertake them.

them voluntarily; but ſtill, to ſecure to himſelf every degree of religious merit, he kept a moſt laborious author, a degraded clergyman, in conſtant employment, whoſe works he paſſed upon the publick for his own, when he did not immediately direct them againſt himſelf.

To this learned perſon, therefore, he went upon the preſent occaſion; and having him called from a night cellar, where he was holding forth on religion and politicks to a company of chairmen, he told him his buſineſs, and deſired him to ſet about it directly. 'Good God, Sir (ſaid the 'author) this is a very unſeaſonable time to ſet 'me upon ſuch a work. From five this morning, 'till eleven at night, have I laboured inceſſantly; 'and now, when I have juſt ſtepped out to take a 'little neceſſary refreſhment'—'Refreſhment! '(anſwered my maſter.) Tell me not of refreſh-'ment, or any thing elſe! Either do my buſineſs, 'or ſay you will not! I can get enough to under-'take it, and gladly too, for leſs than I give you.' '——That is impoſſible (replied the author) if 'they are to live by it! I am ſure what you give 'me ſcarce keeps me from ſtarving!'——'Starv-'ing! (returned my maſter.) So it appears, in-'deed! when you this moment have been indulg-'ing in riot and luxury, and ſmell ſo ſtrong of ſpi-'rituous liquors, that it is offenſive to ſobriety to 'ſtand near you. I wonder you are not aſhamed 'to be guilty of ſuch intemperance, it ill becomes 'a man of morality and religion.'——'Sir, Sir! '(interrupted the author, provoked beyond his pa-'tience.) Have ſome regard to truth and reaſon 'in what you ſay; and look at home, before 'you accuſe me of intemperance! I laboured the

'whole day, without any other refreſhment, or 'ſuſtenance, than a mouthful of bread and cheeſe, 'and a draught of ſmall beer; and now have had 'only a quartern of gin in a pint of warm por-'ter, to waſh down half a pound of ſauſages, and 'you call this intemperance. If I may judge by 'appearances, you have not ſpent your evening 'on ſuch fare.'—'How I have ſpent my evening '(returned my maſter, who, in ſpite of himſelf, 'felt the juſtice of the reproach) is nothing to the 'purpoſe! I am anſwerable for what I do! But 'this manner of talking ſignifies nothing! I muſt 'have this *Exhortation* by eight in the morning! 'It will not take you up much time! You are 'ſufficiently practiſed in the ſtyle: the matter is 'of little conſequence! If you chooſe to drink a 'glaſs of wine, here is half a crown, which I 'make you a preſent of! I would by no means 'have you ſtinted of any thing that is pro-'per.'——'Sir (anſwered the author) I am 'much obliged to you! I will take care that it 'ſhall be ready at the time. You are ſenſible 'that I never think much of any labour to ſerve 'you. I have finiſhed all the pamphlets you 'ordered, about the ballad-ſinger's affair! Here 'they are! This is a letter from you to him, 'that lays him flat! I have quoted half the fa-'thers of the church againſt him!———Theſe 'two are letters to you, upon the ſubject; one 'as from a great lord, the other from a reverend 'divine, ſetting forth the great benefits of your 'miniſtry, and expoſing the profaneneſs and im-'morality of his ballad.——This here is a ſilly 'vindication of his ballad, in a letter to the au-'thor, from one of his ranting companions; and

'this

'this laſt is an addreſs to the publick againſt all 'thoſe irreligious and profane amuſements of bal-'lads, balls, routs, &c. This is a maſter-piece! 'You ſee it is as from myſelf, if you do not 'chooſe to own it; though I do not know but it 'may have more weight with your enemies if it 'appears as from another. So you ſee I have 'worked hard to-day; and now I believe we have 'done with Mr. *Momus* and his ballad.'—'Why 'aye! pretty well, I believe (ſaid my maſter)— 'But hold, I have a thought juſt come into my 'head! You muſt know that the Parſon of the 'pariſh has ſent for that reprobate, that *Momus*, 'and ordered him to alter the tune of his ballad, 'as it happened to have ſeveral of the ſame notes 'with the Pſalm tunes! Now, as this is known, 'what do you think of writing a letter to me, as 'from the Parſon, ſetting forth what he has done, 'and inſinuating that it was the direction of the 'Squire? This will clinch the affair! After ſuch 'an authority no one will dare to ſay a word in its 'behalf: beſides, it will have a good look to be 'taken notice of by ſuch people.'—'That is true '(anſwered the author) it will be ſo, and the Par-'ſon's notice ſhall not be thrown away! I'll do 'it to-morrow morning, as ſoon as I ſend you 'the *Exhortation*.'——My maſter then wiſhed him a good night, and left him to return to his company, while he himſelf went directly home, to prepare for the duties of the next day.

He had ſcarce ſlept off his debauch, when he was called to chaunt his mattin ſong; after which he did not fail to diſplay the wound in his temple, the occaſion of which he promiſed to unfold to his congregation in the evening. This he did to raiſe a curioſity that ſhould gather his whole flock, to

hear so extraordinary an affair, as he designed to propose a subscription, when their passions should be warmed by such an horrid attempt upon their pastor.

By the time he had finished this first work of the day, the *Exhortation* was brought him from the author, with which he went directly to her Grace. He found her (unfashionably early as it was for a person of her rank to be even up) dressed, and waiting for him. 'Please your Grace (said he) 'here is the *Exhortation* your Grace desired of me, 'and I pray Heaven it may prove successful! I am 'afraid I have made your Grace wait, but I came 'the moment I had finished the first duties of the 'morning. If your Grace pleases, I will do my-'self the honour to accompany your Grace! Per-'haps my personal *Exhortation* and prayer may 'have more effect! My Ministry has often been 'blessed with astonishing success.'—'I am sensible 'of that, Doctor (answered her Grace) but this 'unhappy man is of such a strange temper, that I 'apprehend he might be guilty of some act of 'rashness, that might be dangerous to your per-'son, if you were to go to him without his con-'sent; and that I am much afraid I shall hardly 'obtain. No longer ago than yesterday, near as 'the dreadful hour of his execution approaches, 'did I find him engaged at cards with his gaoler; 'and when I expostulated with him on the danger 'of trifling away his few remaining moments in 'so idle a manner (for I was apprehensive of ex-'asperating him if I spoke with greater severity) 'he only smiled, and answered me with a passage 'out of some play.'—'Yes, please your Grace '(replied my master with a lifted eye, and a deep-'fetched groan) cards and plays are the bane

'of

'of half the world: religion is quite neglected 'for them. The great work of reformation will 'never be completed till they are utterly aboliſh-'ed. As your Grace does not think it meet that 'I ſhould viſit this unfortunate gentleman in per-'ſon, I am obedient to your Grace's pleaſure; 'however, I will offer up my prayers for him; 'and my ſpirit ſhall aſſiſt your Grace's pious en-'deavours! Not that I fear what man can do 'unto me: the angel of the Lord watcheth over 'me, or the ſtroke that made this wound had 'given me reſt from my labours.'——

He then diſplayed the mark of Mother *Brimſtone*'s rage, and told her Grace ſo moving and circumſtantial a ſtory of his having been waylaid, and attacked by ſome of *Momus*'s riotous companions, that ſhe implicitly believed him, and ſympathiſed in his ſufferings. He then gave her the *Exhortation* which ſhe was to deliver to her unfortunate couſin; and ſeeing her uneaſy at being obliged to wait till the bank ſhould be open, to get money to diſtribute among the poor wretches in the priſon, he accommodated her Grace with change for a twenty pound note, having (as he told her Grace) juſt ſo much about him, which he was carrying to relieve a poor induſtrious family in great diſtreſs.

It was a great pleaſure to me that I changed my ſervice upon this occaſion, as I was heartily ſick of my maſter; though, from a view I took of his heart, I ſaw that I had not been witneſs to half the myſtery of his iniquity.

My new miſtreſs went directly to the priſon, to her couſin, where ſhe had a ſufficient opportunity for the exertion of her charity among his unhappy fellow-priſoners, while ſhe waited for his riſing, which was not till very late, as he had ſat up the

whole night before, at his beloved diverſion of card-playing. When at length ſhe got admittance to him, her reception was far from being worthy of the trouble ſhe had taken, and the piety of her intentions. He aſked her if ſhe had procured him a pardon; and when ſhe anſwered in the negative, and aſſured him that all ſuch hopes were vain, he then told her that he would diſpenſe with the continuance of her viſit, and the repetition of any more, and in a manner forced her away, ſcarce permitting her to mention the motive of her coming, or to enforce the *Exhortation* of my late maſter, which ſhe with difficulty perſuaded him to take, though, from the manner of his receiving it, there was little probability of his ever taking the trouble to read it.

My miſtreſs, for I had the good fortune to remain in her poſſeſſion, was ſo ſhocked at this inſenſibility, that ſhe went directly home, and ſought relief from the ſolid comforts of religion, pouring out her heart in unfeigned prayer for the converſion of him, and every other object of the divine diſpleaſure; for though a miſguided fervency of devotion had made her, in ſome meaſure, a dupe to the hypocritical zeal of my late maſter, nothing could lead her from the pureſt paths of true piety and virtue; nor did ſhe ſuffer the extravagance of his pretended enthuſiaſm ſo far to blind her better judgement, as to make her avoid the entertainments frequented by perſons of her ſex and rank.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

History of a lady of fashion. Description of a rout. CHRYSAL *changes his service for that of a lady of enterprise. A bold stroke for a husband.*

SHE, accordingly, went that afternoon to the house of a lady of quality, where a great concourse of the best company usually assembled on set invitations, to spend the evening at the favourite amusement of cards. The lady of the house was one of those children of fortune, who rise by the means that ruin thousands. In her early youth she had sacrificed her virtue to vanity, and yielded to the loose desires of the nobleman she was now married to, over whom her humble obliging temper, and particularly her complaisant blindness to his other amours, gained her such an ascendancy, that in a fit of uncommon fondness he made her his wife. But the method he took to secure himself the ease and conveniencies he enjoyed with her, directly overturned them; for her humility and complaisance were all feigned; and, the necessity of counterfeiting them being thus removed, she immediately assumed all the importance of her new character, and exerted the usual prerogatives of it in as high a manner as if she had never been in a meaner rank. The infatuated husband soon saw his error; but it was too late to remedy it; he therefore is forced to compound with her for the indulgence he desires, by submitting to let her gratify her passion for vain

pomp and expenſive ceremony, under the parade of which ſhe ſtrives to hide her obſcure original, as ſhe attempts to obliterate the remembrance of her fall from virtue by a moſt rigid profeſſion of religion. Thus, her routs are the moſt ſplendid, and difficult of acceſs, of any in the town, no perſon being invited but thoſe of the firſt rank, nor any who are not invited being admitted, be their rank what it will; and ſhe profeſſes herſelf a ſtrict follower of my late maſter, in his moſt extravagant opinions, where they do not immediately interfere with her own vanity.

It is impoſſible to convey any notion to you of ſuch a ſcene as this, to which my miſtreſs carried me, it is ſo different from that ſphere in which you have acted. Suppoſe you ſee ſeveral hundred people of both ſexes, and of every age, dreſſed in all the profuſion and elegance of expenſe, and wearing diſſipation and happineſs in their looks, aſſembled together to ſpend the evening in mutual entertainment. This is the face of the picture; but turn the reverſe, and you ſhall behold a ſet of people who have ſacrificed their real intereſt, and the peace of their minds, to the gratification of this, and ſuch-like pleaſure, and who come purely to prey upon each other: accordingly, the whole is one continued ſcene of ſharping, mutual diſtruſt, envy, ſlander, and malevolence; the very few, who like my miſtreſs come there for mere amuſement, and are untainted with ſuch vices, being forced to ſubmit in ſeeming acquieſcence to the torrent they are not able to ſtem.

In the courſe of the evening, it was my fortune often to change my ſervice; but as the ſtay I made with my momentary poſſeſſors was ſo very ſhort,

ſhort, I ſhall wave giving any account of them, eſpecially as the two moſt remarkable of the ſet, and under whom all the reſt who launch out of the common road of life are in a great meaſure characteriſed, have been ſufficiently deſcribed on a former occaſion, though the hiſtories I read in many of their hearts would afford much entertainment, and haſten to the lady in whoſe poſſeſſion I left the company.

My new miſtreſs was the young widow of a perſon of great diſtiuction, who in the decline of life had over-looked the diſparity of age and rank, and married her, ſolely to gratify his paſſion for her beauty. During the few years he lived, his care and prudence kept her indiſcretion within bounds, but as ſoon as that guard was removed, ſhe plunged into all the faſhionable follies of the times, with a keenneſs that courted ruin.

But, though ſhe eagerly followed every purſuit that bore the name of pleaſure, vanity was the ruling paſſion of her heart. The rank into which her huſband had lifted her placed her upon a level, in point of ſociety, with the beſt company, and the fortune he left her was ſufficient to ſupport that rank. But ſtill, as there were many degrees above her, her heart pined for precedency, and ſhe could not enjoy the honours ſhe had, while ſhe was obliged to give place to ſo many.

She had formed a variety of ſchemes to obtain this deſired object, but ſtill without ſucceſs. At length, the very night I came into her poſſeſſion, an accident ſuggeſted one to her, which ſhe immediately put into execution, with the moſt ſanguine hopes. There had been a nobleman of the firſt rank in the company, the weakneſs of whoſe

whose reason had obliged his friends to put him under the government of a person to whose fidelity they thought they could entrust so important a charge. As private misfortunes are always an agreeable topick for publick conversation, an elderly lady, who was acquainted with this nobleman's family, entertained the company with several melancholy instances of his weakness. My mistress regarded this, only as it was meant, as common chat, till some time after, the nobleman happening to fix his eye with some earnestness upon her, a sudden thought darted into her mind, that, if she could any way bring about a marriage with him, all her dear views of ambition would be gratified at once.

The moment this thought took possession of her head, it drove out every other. She lost deal! She revoked! She missed reckoning her honours! In short, she was so absent, that she was obliged to pretend a violent head-ach, and leave the company. As soon as she got home she went to bed, where she spent the night in forming numberless projects for accomplishing her design; but still the account which the old lady had given of the vigilance of the person to whose care the nobleman was entrusted disconcerted them all. At length she resolved to attempt corrupting his fidelity, as she could not expect to elude his vigilance. She had often heard that the greatest honesty was not proof against a proper price, and her knowledge of her own heart did not contradict that opinion. However, not to be too rash, nor betray her design before she had some prospect of success, she resolved to sound the person, before she applied directly to him.

Accordingly,

Accordingly, as ſoon as ſhe got up, ſhe wrote him an anonymous letter, letting him know, that a perſon had a certain affair to propoſe to him, for his concurrence, in which he ſhould receive immediately a thouſand guineas, and an annuity of five hundred pounds a year, beſide ſeveral other conſiderable advantages; and that what he was deſired to do could be effected without any poſſible loſs, or danger, to himſelf. This letter ſhe ſent by the penny-poſt, and deſired the anſwer might be returned in the ſame manner, under a feigned direction, to the houſe of a perſon in whom ſhe confided.

Such a letter neceſſarily ſurpriſed the gentleman to whom it was ſent. Though the greatneſs of the offer convinced him that ſome extraordinary piece of villainy was deſigned, yet, as he knew himſelf above temptation, he reſolved to humour the ſcheme, till he ſhould diſcover the whole of it, for the honeſt revenge of puniſhing a baſe attempt to ſeduce him into diſhoneſty. Accordingly, he anſwered the letter directly in ſuch terms as he imagined would tempt the writer to be more explicit, expreſſing his readineſs to embrace any propoſal that ſhould be ſo advantageous, when he ſhould be ſatisfied that the perſon who made it was able to perform it, and worthy of his confidence.

This bait took, as he deſired. My miſtreſs, whoſe eager imagination was too full of the deſired object to let her uſe any caution, thought her work done, and immediately wrote him another letter, to which ſhe ſigned her name, and in it explained her whole ſcheme of marrying the nobleman by his aſſiſtance, enforcing her former offer, by a promiſe of continuing him in

the agency of the eſtate, or, rather indeed, of ſharing it with him, and deſiring to meet him that evening, either at her houſe, or any other place he pleaſed, to confer upon proper means for bringing it into immediate execution.

The gentleman was not a moment at a loſs how to act on ſuch an occaſion; he immediately waited upon the nobleman who was next heir to his unhappy charge, and, ſhowing both the letters, deſired his directions how to act. Though this nobleman was ſtruck with horrour at a piece of villainy that did ſuch diſhonour to the ſex, reſpect for the memory of the worthy man whoſe name ſhe bore would not permit him to expoſe her to publick inſult; however, to prevent her making the like attempt elſewhere, he reſolved to ſhock her, by a perſonal detection: accordingly, he made the gentleman write her word, that it was improper for him to be ſeen going to her houſe, but that, if ſhe pleaſed, he would meet her, at eight that evening, at a certain tavern, where ſhe ſhould enquire for him, by the name of Mr. *Trueman*. Such a proſpect of immediate ſucceſs made her blind to every appearance of deceit or danger, and, accordingly, ſhe prepared to attend the appointment, with the moſt ſanguine expectation.

But his Lordſhip had prepared a reception for her which ſhe never ſuſpected. A little before the time he went to the tavern, with the gentleman, and fixing upon a room in which there was a cloſet large enough for him and another nobleman, whom he took with him, left word, that, if any lady ſhould enquire for Mr. *Trueman*, ſhe ſhould be told that he was above alone, and the gentleman called down to her. As they judged, her

her impatience brought her rather before the time, when her imagined confederate ſhowing her up into the room, and placing her ſo that every word ſhe ſaid might be heard in the cloſet, he entered into a converſation with her, on the ſubject of their meeting, in which he led her to repeat her whole propoſal, and by ſtarting difficulties, to enforce it with every iniquitous argument in her power.

As ſoon as his Lordſhip thought ſhe had ſaid enough, he iſſued from his concealment, and, looking her full in the face, calmly thanked her for the care ſhe was taking to preſerve the noble family of his relation, which ſhe had whimſically given as one of the reaſons of her deſiring this marriage. It is impoſſible to deſcribe her ſituation at the ſight of this nobleman, whom ſhe well knew, as well as his intereſt in defeating her deſign. Aſtoniſhment, ſhame, and confuſion, ſtruck her motionleſs and dumb. She was juſt able to turn her eye to her betrayer, and then fell in a ſwoon upon the floor. Such diſtreſs naturally ſoftened the reſentment of the generous nobleman to whom ſhe had deſigned ſuch an injury: he aſſiſted to raiſe her from the ground, and having with difficulty brought her to herſelf, inſtead of aggravating her diſtreſs by reproaches, mildly adviſed her to deſiſt from ſuch unjuſtifiable ſchemes, and promiſed her, that he would take no notice of what had happened, if he found that her future conduct merited ſuch tenderneſs.

This treatment had the wiſhed effect. That falſe ſpirit, which would have bor'n her up againſt any ſeverity, ſunk before ſuch unexpected delicacy and compaſſion. She melted into a flood of tears; and, unable too utter a word, fell upon her knees, and

and kiſſed the hand of the nobleman, in a rapture not to be expreſſed; who immediately raiſed her from the ground, and telling her, that he imagined it muſt be diſagreeable to her to ſtay there any longer, ordered a chair, and handed her to it himſelf, with the utmoſt politeneſs and reſpect.

Her ſituation, when ſhe got home, was truely pitiable. The aſſurance of her late hopes doubled the diſtreſs of her diſappointment, and the fear of ſhame made the thought of her guilt intolerable. She curſed her own folly, the perfidy of her betrayer, and all the ways of faithleſs man; and, in the agony of her grief, reſolved to leave this deteſted town next morning, and bury herſelf for ever from the world, in her country-ſeat.

This reſolution ſhe held in till next morning, when ſhe actually ſet out for the country; but I have reaſon to believe it did not hold very long, as I have frequently ſeen her ſince in all publick places, as gay and unconcerned as ever. As for me, I was given to her coachman, to pay the farrier who took care of her horſes; but he thought it more neceſſary to give me, in payment of a debt of his own, to a man who kept a beer-houſe, who gave me to an attorney, to defend him againſt a proſecution for entertaining a gang of ſtreet-robbers, and buying their booty. By the attorney I was given, in the courſe of buſineſs, to a knight of the poſt, whoſe evidence was to acquit the the publican. From this conſcientious perſon, as he was on his way to a country-aſſiſes, where the lives of many depended on his good-nature, I was taken by a highwayman, who

loſt

loſt me that evening to a nobleman, at a horſe-race.

CHAP. XIV.

CHRYSAL, *by a natural progreſſion, comes into the poſſeſſion of a knight of the induſtry, who brings him to a horſe-race, where he has an opportunity of ſeeing a noble jockey practiſe part of the myſterious ſcience of the turf, with other common occurrences.*

IN the three or four laſt changes of my ſervice there was nothing remarkable. The progreſſion was natural, and the events common: but I muſt own, I was a good deal ſurpriſed at ſeveral occurrences in my preſent ſtation, which were, in the proper courſe of things, ſo ſtrange and unaccountable, that the moſt whimſical devil could never have thought of them, without information.

The *gentleman* who had acquired me ſo eaſily on the road, and brought me to the *meeting*, was a native of a neighbouring nation, who, on the credit of his ſkill in the myſterious ſcience of *chance*, ſupported by a good ſtock of aſſurance and perſonal courage, had come over to make his fortune, in which deſign he had really ſo far ſucceeded, that he had lived for ſeveral years in the higheſt life, and maintained the appearance of the eſtate he talked of in his own country, by the ſole force of his genius, the fertility of which was not confined to one reſource; but, when fortune frowned upon his labours at play, was al-

ways

ways ready to redreſs the effects of her malice, by the method in which I came into his poſſeſſion.

The roads had been *bad* that morning, which kept him a little later than uſual, ſo that the company were at the *poſt* when he joined them. By their noiſe and appearance as we rode up to them, I took them for a croud of their own ſervants; their dreſs being exactly the undreſs uniform of that party-coloured tribe; and every voice being exerted with the ſame vehemence, and in the like ſtyle of oaths and imprecations, with which thoſe gentry receive them, at the door of a play-houſe or palace; ſo that I ſcarce knew how to believe my ſenſes, when I recogniſed the faces of ſeveral perſons of the moſt elevated ſtation, and, particularly, moſt of thoſe among whom I had ſpent the evening I deſcribed to you at the *club*, on my firſt coming to this part of the world.

As ſoon as the *bets* were *made*, and the noiſe began to ſubſide a little, my maſter preſſed through the mob of pick-pockets, bubbles, lords, and jockies, and came up to the poſt juſt as they were preparing to *ſtart*, when calling to one of the grooms, 'Well, my lord' (ſaid he.) 'Well, Jack, 'replied the other) where have you been all 'day?' This was all the diſcourſe they had time for, the horſes going off that moment: but, on the ſtrength of this my maſter *backed* his lordſhip deeply.

It is impoſſible to deſcribe to you, who have never ſeen any thing of the kind, a ſcene of ſuch confuſion as the field was during the running, the whole mob, high and low, riding headlong from place to place, and driving againſt each other, without

without any reſpect to rank, or regard to ſafety, and roaring out their bets, and ſhouting for joy, at every viciſſitude in the running. At length the *heat* was ended, but ſo contrary to my maſter's expectation, that he loſt to a noble duke who was in the ſecret, not only all the fruits of his morning's campaign, but a large ſum, beſides, more than he was able to pay him.

This was a ſevere ſtroke. He rode directly up to the poſt, and addreſſing the ſame groom, juſt as he came out of the *ſcales*; 'Sblood, my lord (ſaid he) how could you *fling* me ſo! I am quite broke up: his Grace has *touched* me for five hundred; and the devil of the thing is, that I have been ſo *torn* down by a *bad run* of late, that I am quite out of caſh, and have not a ſhilling to pay him.'——'How could this be? (replied the groom) did I not give you the *word?* But you are ſuch a careleſs ſon of a bitch.'—'The word with a vengeance (anſwered my maſter) you returned my *well*, but I have found it very ill.'—'Aye, I gueſſed it was ſo (added the groom) you were ignorant that we were *ſmoaked*, and found it neceſſary to change the *lay*. Where the devil were you all this morning? Taking a ride, I ſuppoſe. You will never leave off, till theſe rides bring you a ride in a cart to Tyburn. But, keep out of his Grace's way till the horſes ſtart, and we will *bring you home*, I will engage. He thinks he has all the ſecret, but he is miſtaken this bout, and ſhall pay for his enterance before we admit him to be *one of us.*'——This diſcourſe paſſed as they were walking together to a booth, where the groom was to *rub*, and *ſettle* the next heat.

You

You are ſurpriſed at this familiarity between my maſter and the groom. When he firſt addreſſed him by the title of, *My lord*, I own I thought it no more than a *cant*, which, in the freedom of this intercourſe, where lords and lacquies are upon a level, is common: but what was my aſtoniſhment at a nearer view, to ſee that he really was the thing he was called; and that a laudable ambition of excelling in every, the meaneſt art, had induced him, and many others of his rank, who were riding againſt him, to take the place of their ſervants in this fatiguing and dangerous employment; ennobling, by this condeſcenſion, the moſt abject and vile offices with the honours earned by the merit and virtues of their anceſtors. Strange ambition, at a time when the intereſt and glory of their country called for their aſſiſtance!

As ſoon as the noble groom and my maſter were alone, 'Now, *Jack*, what think you of my 'little *ſtun-horſe?* (ſays his Lordſhip.) You muſt 'know that I have *meaſured the foot* of them 'all in this heat, and find that I *have the heels* 'by a *diſtance* at leaſt; but the weights are above 'my *trim*. However, we have a remedy for 'that: look at this cap (taking one out of a 'cheſt, in which his running dreſs had been 'brought to the ground) this is a *leaden ſkull*, 'and weighs above two *ſtun*; put this on your 'head, the thickneſs of your own ſkull will prevent its giving you the head-ach: aye, it fits 'you very well. Now, I will wear this to the 'poſt, and, juſt before we ſtart, complain that 'my cap is too wide, and borrow your's to ride 'in; and then when I alight at the *ſcales*, after 'the heat is over, I will pull off your's, as if to

'wipe

'wipe my face, and give it you to hold, who 'can return me this, to weigh in, and as I wear 'the ſame truſſes, ſtuffed with handkerchiefs, in 'which I carried the weight laſt heat, they will 'never ſuſpect us.——Ha, Jack, what ſay you to 'this! match me this, among all your *Hiber-* 'nian tricks, if you can. Go your way! double 'with his Grace, and *lay* all you can, I'll *go* with 'you; but be ſure to meet me at the poſt be- 'fore, and at the ſcales after the heat, and not 'to blow the buſineſs, by being in too great a 'hurry.'

I ſee you wonder how his Lordſhip ſhould put ſuch confidence in my maſter, as he ſeemed to know him ſo well; but the truth was, my maſter's character for courage was ſo well eſtabliſhed, that it bore him through things every day of his life, unconvicted at leaſt, if not unſuſpected, for which a more timorous villain would have been pilloried: and this made the other think him the ſafeſt perſon to entruſt with the execution of ſuch a ſcheme, as no one would dare to attempt examining the cap, or prevent his reaching it to his lordſhip.——The fineſſe ſucceeded; his lordſhip *beat every tail hollow*; and my maſter not only *cleared* with his Grace, but alſo won conſiderably for himſelf, and his confederate beſides. Things were carried on in the ſame genteel manner for the remainder of the meeting, at which there was a vaſt concourſe of the beſt company, the weather being very delicate, the turf in choice order, and the ſport very fine, and ſo fair that *the knowing ones were all taken in*; and, to make the pleaſure complete, though the croud was ſo great, there was no unlucky accident happened, except to two of the noble grooms, one

of

of whom was bor'n down in the *croſſing* by the ſuperior ſtrength of a ſervant, who rode againſt him, and *ſlipped* his ſhoulder; and the other broke his neck, by his horſe's falling in the running.

It was on a ſporting bet, on one of the by matches, that I was loſt that evening, to the nobleman, as I ſaid, in whoſe poſſeſſion I happened to remain to the end of the meeting. The next morning after my new maſter's return to London he went to pay his court to the heir of the crown, who was then at one of his country-ſeats.

CHAP. XV.

CHRYSAL's *maſter pays his court to a great perſon, who ſeems not much to reliſh his humour, and expreſſes ſome unfaſhionable ſentiments concerning polite pleaſures. In the courſe of a regular circulation,* CHRYSAL *comes into the poſſeſſion of a miniſter of ſtate, who refuſes a friendly offer for very odd reaſons. His ſtrange notions of ſome affairs.*

SOME publick occaſion had brought a concourſe more than uſual in thoſe retirements, to pay their duty to the prince that morning. As my maſter was one of the laſt who came, as ſoon as his devoirs were ended, ſome of the company accidentally aſked him, what had kept him ſo late; on which, with an eaſy air of pleaſantry, he anſwered aloud, that 'He had been detained 'by a very whimſical affair: a certain nobleman

'(ſaid

'(ſaid he) went into company laſt night ſo *im-*
'*menſely* drunk, that having ſet in to play, and loſt
'five thouſand pounds, he quite forgot it this
'morning, and refuſed to pay the money, till
'ſome perſon of honour, who was unconcerned
'in the matter, ſhould vouch his having loſt it
'fairly; on which it was referred to me, and ſorry
'I am, that I was qualified to give it againſt
'him.'——'How, my lord, by being a perſon
'of honour!' (ſays the gentleman he ſpoke to.)—
'No (replied my maſter, with a ſignificant
'ſmile) not ſo neither, but by being unconcerned
'in winning it.'——And then, turning ſhort to another, 'But have you heard the news, my lord?
'(ſaid he.) Mr.——— caught his wife yeſterday
'taking a ſerious walk in Kenſington-gardens,
'with the gentleman whom we all know he for-
'bade her keeping company with ſome time ago.'
——A ſmile of general approbation encouraged him ſo much, that he concluded with ſaying, 'He
'wiſhed he had himſelf been the happy delinquent
'ſo taken, as he doubted not but the graveſt
'biſhop on the bench would, were he to ſpeak
'his mind honeſtly.'

The Prince had heard him without interruption; but as ſoon as he had ended, turning to a nobleman who ſtood near him, 'There can be
'no greater inſult (ſaid he, with a determined
'look and ſolemn accent) to a perſon who is ap-
'pointed to put the laws of a country in execu-
'tion, than for any one to boaſt of a breach of
'thoſe in his preſence. For my part, if I am
'ever called by Providence to that ſtation, it is
'my invariable reſolution, that no man, how ex-
'alted ſoever in rank, who lives in open violation
'of any law, human or divine, ſhall ever hold

'employment under me, or receive countenance 'from me.'

This rebuke damped my maſter's ſpirits, as it ſtruck a reverential awe into all preſent. He hung down his head, and in a few moments withdrew, quite abaſhed. But he ſoon recovered; and to ſilence the jeſts of his companions, and ſhow that he was not to be brow-beat out of his own way, he made one with them to ſpend the evening at a brothel-tavern, where he gave me to a pimp, who gave me to a whore, who gave me to a bully, who gave me to a pawn-broker, who gave me to a beau, who gave me to a tavern-keeper, who paid me into the bank, from whence I was ſent, in the change of a note, to the firſt miniſter of ſtate.

The notion I had hitherto entertained of human politicks made me enter into this ſervice with reluctance; but my prejudice was ſoon removed. My new maſter was juſt coming from his cloſet when I was delivered to him: he ſtopped to count the money, then putting it into his purſe, and turning to a clerk, who followed him with a huge bag of papers in his hand——'I 'muſt have all theſe finiſhed againſt morning '(ſaid he) that I may be able to read them over, 'before they are ſigned. I know they are a 'great many, but the buſineſs requires deſpatch; 'and diligence and method overcome the great-'eſt difficulties.'——Saying this, he went into his drawing-room, which was filled with ſeveral of the moſt eminent members of the community, who came, ſome to conſult, ſome to adviſe (for he refuſed not the advice of the meaneſt) and all to congratulate him on the ſucceſs of his meaſures.—When the buſineſs and formality of this

ſcene

ſcene were over, the company withdrew, all but one gentleman, who deſired ſome private converſation with my maſter. As ſoon as they were alone, 'I have done myſelf the honour to wait 'upon you this morning (ſaid the gentleman) to 'inform you, that there is a vacancy in my bo-'rough, and to know whom you would have me 'return; for, as I ſee that all your meaſures are 'evidently calculated for the good of your coun-'try, I am determined to ſupport you.'

'I am much obliged to your good opinion '(anſwered my maſter;) but I am reſolved never 'to interfere in matters of this nature, nor to at-'tempt influencing the election or vote of any 'perſon by any other means than reaſon: all, 'therefore, that I have to aſk is, that you will 'return an honeſt man; while he approves of 'my conduct he will certainly ſupport me, and 'no longer do I wiſh to be ſupported.'

'What, Sir! (replied the gentleman in aſtoniſh-'ment) not deſire to have your friends returned! 'Why, Sir, is it poſſible that you can be a ſtran-'ger to the intrigues that are forming againſt you, 'by a faction, who, when they had reduced the 'ſtate to a mere *wreck*, like a cowardly, mutinous 'crew, flew in the face of their maſter, took the 'boat, and made their eſcape to ſhore; and now, 'when you have not only brought her ſafe into 'harbour, but alſo fitted her out for another 'voyage, with every proſpect of ſucceſs, are ca-'balling to undermine, and turn you away from 'the helm: not that they even pretend to arraign 'your conduct or ſkill, but juſt that they may 'have the pillaging the fruits of your labours. As 'this, Sir, is notoriouſly the caſe, you muſt ex-'cuſe the warmth of my honeſt zeal when I tell

'you, that I think you muſt be guilty of very 'ſtrange, very blameable remiſſneſs, if you ne- 'glect any poſſible method of diſappointing their 'pernicious deſigns.'

'My friend (returned my maſter) I am too 'ſenſible of the truth of all you ſay, but hope 'there is no neceſſity for my having recourſe to 'methods which my ſoul diſapproves. Without 'the aſſiſtance of any ſuch did I (to purſue your 'mode of ſpeech) firſt point out to our maſter, 'and the reſt of the ſhip's company, the errors in 'their ſteering, the rocks they were ready to run 'upon, and the way to avoid them. Without 'any ſuch did I take the helm in that dangerous 'time, when they fled from the wreck, and 'worked her out of the breakers they left her 'among; and without any ſuch will I ſupport 'my place at the helm, or reſign it; for, in my 'opinion, no end can juſtify improper means.

'Shall I own to you, my friend, that your offer 'gives me pain? Do not miſtake me: I am 'ſincerely obliged to you for that good opinion 'which dictated it to your honeſt heart; but the 'truth is, that any member of the community's 'having the power of making ſuch an offer 'proves ſuch a degeneracy in our conſtitution, 'as threatens its overthrow in the end. A par- 'liament ſhould be a repreſentation of the people; 'but how can it be ſaid to be that, if the people 'are not at liberty to chooſe whom they pleaſe 'to repreſent them? Beſides, ſuch a manner of '*nominating* diſappoints the end, as well as it 'deſtroys the eſſence of a parliament; as it is too 'probable that the nominator ſhall ſtipulate con- 'ditions with *his* member, that may not only take 'away the power of his voting according to the

'dictates

'dictates of his judgement and conſcience, but 'alſo enjoin ſuch as may be directly oppoſite to 'both, and injurious, if not deſtructive, to that 'country, which he thus *nominally* repreſents. A 'parliament, therefore, to be *free*, ſhould be *freely* 'choſen, no man having it in his power to do 'more than give his own vote; and ſuch a par-'liament, to keep up to the excellence of its na-'ture in its firſt inſtitution, ſhould not continue 'longer than one ſeſſion, but a new one be called 'as often as the occaſions of the ſtate ſhould re-'quire it, once in every year at leaſt, for ſo often 'does the intereſt of a nation demand that its 'guardians ſhould meet. Such a parliament, ſen-'ſible of the ſhortneſs of the duration, and na-'ture of the tenure of their power, would take 'care never to act againſt the intereſt of their 'conſtituents; or, if human frailty ſhould err, 'their time would be too ſhort to eſtabliſh the evil, 'and, as it would be impoſſible for them to be 'choſen again, the next parliament would remedy 'the miſchief.—Such ſhould a Britiſh parliament 'be! Such I hope it will be! It is every honeſt 'Briton's duty to hope ſo! and not only that, 'but to endeavour to make it ſo! Nor ſhall any 'act of mine ever ſeem to countenance a practice 'that contradicts this principle. By ſpeaking and 'acting in ſtrict conformity to the dictates of *my* 'judgement and conſcience, have I hitherto ſuc-'ceeded, contrary to the apprehenſions of many, 'beyond the expectations of all; and the ſame 'means, and none other, will I ever purſue.'—— 'Heaven bleſs your pious intentions!' (ſaid the gentleman, taking his hand, and kiſſing it in a rap-ture, tears of joy running down his face.) 'Hea-'ven will bleſs them. Happy ſovereign in ſuch a

'servant! Happy Britain in such a guardian!'— Saying this, he took his leave of my master, who went directly to wait upon his.

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL's *sentiments of his master's master, who gives a remarkable reason for his approbation of his minister's measures and manner of doing business. The minister's charge to a general, on appointing him to a command.* CHRYSAL *enters into the service of the general. Conflict between maternal tenderness and glory, in which the latter is triumphant. Strange advice from a mother to her son.*

THE first view of this august person struck me with a reverence which I had never felt for man before. Man may be deceived in the looks of man; but we see through all disguise, and read the real character, in the heart. Honest, benevolent, and humane, the social virtues brightened the royal in his breast.—'Sire!' (said my master, addressing him with the most respectful sincerity) 'here are the despatches which 'you ordered me to draw up yesterday. Since I 'had the honour of your commands then, I have 'received some further intelligence, that confirms 'the justice of your resolutions. Disappointed, 'but not deterred by the repulse which they justly 'met with from you, those people have the con-'fidence to make a new attempt, and think to 'obtain

'obtain by menaces what was refuſed to their in-
'treaties; but the event will convince them, that
'it is more difficult to a generous mind to deny
'the ſuppliant, than repulſe the inſolent. Strong
'in the natural ſtrength of your dominions, and
'ſtronger in the love of your people, you are
'able to aſſert your own cauſe againſt all the
'powers of the world, on that element which
'nature has pointed out for the ſcene of your
'triumphs; nor will you permit any other to in-
'terfere with you on it. All you require is a
'neutrality, where you are intitled to aſſiſtance.
'This ſhows your confidence in your own
'ſtrength, and your contempt of them. But
'even this contempt will not overlook any diſ-
'reſpect to yourſelf, any partiality to your ene-
'mies. Let them either behave themſelves as
'friends, or profeſs themſelves foes.——This
'choice is indifferent to you. As to their com-
'plaints, their own unjuſt actions are the cauſe
'of them; and, when this is removed, they will
'ceaſe of courſe. Till then, to ſeek a remiſſion
'of the puniſhment, and ſtill perſiſt in the crime,
'is an inſult upon juſtice and mercy; and for
'their menaces, they are beneath the notice of
'an anſwer.'

'Be it ſo,' (replied the reverend monarch, the indignation of his honeſt heart flaſhing from his eyes) 'be it ſo: you ſpeak the ſentiments of my 'ſoul.'——Then turning to a favoured ſubject, who ſtood near him, 'It is a pleaſure to 'me to tranſact buſineſs with this man (conti-'nued he;) he makes me underſtand him, and 'does not perplex my ſoul with a vain maze of 'timorous wiles, but ſpeaks and acts with open 'honeſty and boldneſs.'——The honour of this

teſtimony warmed the heart of my maſter with a joy that overpaid his labours, and added new fire to the aſſiduity of his ſoul. As ſoon as he went home, he found a perſon waiting for him, whom he had appointed to meet him, on an affair of the greateſt importance.——'I have ſent for 'you, my friend (ſaid my maſter) on an oc- 'caſion, which, I am ſenſible, will give joy to 'your heart. You are to command a ſeparate 'body of the troops, which have been ſent to pro- 'ſecute this neceſſary and juſt war in America. 'I need not put myſelf, nor you, to the pain of 'repeating the cauſes of the ſhameful inactivity, 'to give it no ſeverer name, by which this war has 'been drawn into ſuch a length: you know, and 'will avoid them. You will not wear out op- 'portunity, in making unneceſſary preparations 'for improbable occaſions; you will not damp the 'ardour of your ſoldiers by delay, nor prolong a 'burthenſome war, to enrich yourſelf with the 'ſpoils of your country. You are young, active, 'and brave: ſuch a commander only do Britiſh 'ſoldiers want, to lead them to victory. You 'have no ſenior, no ſuperior here, to reſtrain the 'efforts of your ſpirit by timid caution; at the 'ſame time that your judgement will ſupply the 'place of experience, and prevent your falling 'into the misfortunes which ſelf-ſufficient, bru- 'tal raſhneſs has made ſo fatal to others. Your 'inſtructions are compriſed in a few words— 'Make the beſt uſe your judgement ſhall direct you 'of the forces entruſted to your command, to de- 'fend the property, and avenge the wrongs of 'your fellow-ſubjects; and to vindicate the ho- 'nour of this abuſed nation.——I know whom I 'ſpeak to, and therefore I ſay no more. Proceed,

'my

'my friend, my ſoldier; anſwer my expectations, 'and you will fulfil the wiſhes of your country.' ——Saying thus, he embraced him tenderly; and as he went with him to the door, happening to look into the ſtreet, he ſaw a number of diſabled ſoldiers, who had placed themſelves before his window, to ſollicit relief for their miſeries.——'O, my friend! (continued he, graſping his hand) behold thoſe victims of the unjuſt ambition of that enemy againſt whom you go; and let the ſight add the wings of an eagle to your haſte, to tear down a power which has been thus fatal to ſo many of your brave countrymen, to prevent any more from ſuffering the like evils, from the ſame cauſe. *The man who does not uſe, to the beſt advantage, the means entruſted to him by his country to deſtroy its enemies, is guilty of all the evils which thoſe enemies may afterwards do to his country.*——Shall I beg a favour of my friend? Diſtribute this money (giving him a handful of guineas) among thoſe men, as from yourſelf. If it is not enough to give each a guinea, I will be your debtor for what is wanting; if it is more, keep the reſidue in your hands, to apply to the ſame uſe on the firſt occaſion you meet. This much will relieve their real wants, and more might only tempt them to exceſs. The invidiouſneſs of my ſtation makes it improper for me to do even an act of virtue, which may be miſtaken for oſtentation. Adieu, my friend. Heaven guard you in the day of battle, and guide your ſword to victory.'

I here quitted the ſervice of this great man, the inſtances of whoſe conduct, which I have

given, make any further character of him unneceſſary.

The regard with which the miniſter had addreſſed himſelf to my preſent maſter raiſed my curioſity to take an immediate view of his heart, as I knew not but that I might leave his poſſeſſion directly: but my fears were agreeably diſappointed; for the number of guineas given to him by my maſter exceeding that of the objects to whom we were to be diſtributed, it fell to my lot to remain a little longer with him.

The honour of his new command, and the confidence with which it was entruſted to him, warmed his heart with the moſt exalted joy. He executed his charitable commiſſion, and then went directly home, where, bending his knee to his beloved mother, and kiſſing her hand in rapture, 'O, madam! (ſaid he) congratulate your happy 'ſon. My prayers at length are heard; and I 'am bleſſed with an opportunity of proving to 'the world my attachment to the ſervice, my ardour for the glory of my country. I am honoured with a ſeparate command in America, 'where Heaven fires my ſoul with an aſſurance, 'that I ſhall have the happineſs of cruſhing the 'injurious power of our enemies in the very 'place where it firſt attacked my country; where 'it has too long triumphed in its wrongs.'

'Heaven bleſs my ſon,' (replied the matron, as ſoon as a guſh of tears of joy and tenderneſs permitted her to ſpeak.) 'Heaven guard my ſon, 'and bleſs his pious hopes. Let me only live 'to ſee him return with the honour of having 'done his duty, and I ſhall die contented. But 'why do I ſay this, as if my heart felt a doubt 'for him? *My* ſon will never fail to do his duty;

'he will never fall from the paths of honour, however dangerous, nor ſeek to colour over with 'ſpecious arguments the loſs of his honour. He 'will not make his mother aſhamed of having 'bor'n him, nor bring her grey hairs with diſ'grace and ſorrow to the grave. I know the 'inſtructions which have formed his youth; I 'know the principles of his heart; I know my 'own blood better.—But, O my ſon! remember 'alſo, that prudence diſtinguiſhes true courage 'from raſhneſs; that your country has now a 'peculiar intereſt in your life; and that you be'tray its truſt, if you loſe it by any unneceſſary 'boldneſs. Remember your aged mother, who 'hangs weeping over her grave till you return. 'Remember your'———

'O, my mother, no more! Recal not ideas, 'which my preſent ſituation requires me to forget. 'Fear not; your ſon will not be a diſgrace to the 'honeſt race from which he is ſprung. He will 'do his duty as a ſoldier, a Britiſh ſoldier, and 'as a man ſenſible of the obligations of reaſon 'and religion. Whether I ſhall ever have the 'happineſs of kiſſing this hand again is only 'known to Heaven; but it is in my power to pro'miſe, that the name of your ſon ſhall never raiſe 'a bluſh in the face of his mother, nor his 'actions require the palliation of excuſe from his 'friends. If life is to be ſhort, let it be well filled: 'one day of glory is better than an age of idleneſs 'or diſhonour. Adieu, my mother; your bleſ'ſing is a ſhield to the head, a ſupport to the ſoul 'of your ſon; one tender parting more, and then 'my heart muſt be reſigned to other cares.'——

'Heaven bleſs! Heaven guard my ſon!' And then,

as he went from her, 'O Glory, what a tribute 'doſt thou exact from wretched mortals!'

My maſter pauſed a moment to wipe away the pious tear which filial duty owed to ſuch a parting, and then haſted to another ſcene of equal tenderneſs.

Mutual merit had improved the inſtinctive liking of youth between my maſter and a young lady, whoſe elevated rank and large fortune were her leaſt recommendations, into the ſtrongeſt attachment of real love. As reaſon could make no objection on either ſide, parental approbation gave its ſanction to their happy choice, and had encouraged virgin timidity to appoint the day that was to ſeal their bliſs. Hard taſk upon a favoured lover to communicate to the choſen of his ſoul the order which was to damp riſing expectation, by this delay; and tear him from the inſtant hope of that happineſs which he had ſo long been ſuing for. But honour, and the ſervice of his country, demanded this fiery trial, to prepare him for that height of glory to which his ſoul aſpired.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

Another ſcene of tenderneſs. Love and honour in the old-faſhioned, romantick ſtyle. CHRYSAL *quits the ſervice of the general, and, after ſome few common changes, enters into that of honeſt Aminadab. Concluſion of Aminadab's agency for her Grace.*

AS ſoon as he had recovered from the ſoftneſs into which his mother's tenderneſs had melted him, he went directly to his miſtreſs. She received him with the freedom proper in their preſent ſituation, but ſoon perceived an alteration in his countenance, that ſhowed her his heart was not at eaſe. This alarmed her tender fears: 'What (ſaid ſhe, looking earneſtly at him) 'can make a troubled gloom overcaſt that face, 'where hope and happineſs have, for ſome time, 'brightened every ſmile! Can any thing have happened to diſturb the proſpect ſo pleaſing to us! 'Can you feel a grief that you think me unworthy 'or unable to ſhare with you! It muſt be ſo: 'that faint, that laboured ſmile betrays the ſickneſs of your heart.'

'O deareſt wiſh of that heart,' (replied he, taking her hand, and kiſſing it in extaſy) 'how 'ſhall I merit ſuch perfection! It is impoſſible: 'I am unworthy: but let my ſoul thank Heaven 'for bleſſing it with this opportunity of riſing 'nearer to a level with your virtues; a hope that

'will

'will ſoften the ſeverity of abſence, and make the 'delay of happineſs ſeem ſhorter.'

'*What canſt thou mean* (ſaid ſhe, a jealous 'doubt alarming her delicacy)—'*Delay—I un-* 'derſtand thee not——*I urge not.*'——'Miſtake 'not, O my love, the inconſiſtencies which an-'guiſh extorts from my bleeding heart.——How 'can I ſay it!——Our happineſs is delayed—— 'delayed but to be more exalted.—Honour, the 'ſervice of my country, call'——'*And am I to* 'be left?*'*——'But for a time, a little time, the 'pain of which ſhall be overpaid by the joy of 'meeting never to part again.——O ſpare my 'heart, reſtrain thoſe tears; I am not worthy, I 'am not proof to ſuch a trial.—The intereſt, the 'glory of my country demand my ſervice, and my 'gracious maſter has honoured me with a ſtation, 'in which my endeavours may be effectual to ac-'compliſh his commands——nay, muſt be effec-'tual, where love urges duty, where you are the 'ineſtimable reward.'——'*If that reward is all* 'you ſeek, why do you fly from it? My fortune is 'amply ſufficient! Quit then the dangerous paths of 'ambition, and let us retire, and ſeek true happineſs 'in content.*'*——'O ſpare my ſtruggling heart; 'what can, ſhall I do!—The tryal is too great 'for human fortitude! Aſſiſt me, glory! help, 'O my country! ſupport me through this conflict, 'and I ſhall triumph over every other difficulty 'and danger. I go, my love, but to deſerve 'thee:—'*Go! go! and Heaven guide and guard* 'your ſteps!' (waving her hand, and turning from him to hide her tears.) *I ſhall no longer ſtruggle* 'with the ſacred impulſe that leads you on to glory.' —Then turning to him, '*But, remember how you* 'leave me!—Think what I feel till you return!

'—*What*

'—*What muſt I be, ſhould*'——— The horrour of this thought made her unable to ſay more: he flew into her arms, and mingling his tears with her's, as her head reclined upon his boſom, in the tenderneſs of a chaſte embrace, 'This is too 'much (ſaid he;) this is too much!——I never 'can repay this exceſs of goodneſs.'—Then breaking from her arms, in a kind of enthuſiaſm.——'Heaven gives my ſoul (continued he) this fore-'taſte of happineſs, as an earneſt of ſucceſs: I go 'to certain victory: the prayers of angels muſt 'prevail.'——Saying theſe words, he ruſhed out of the room, leaving her half dead with grief. Nor was he in a much happier ſtate: the thought of parting from her damping the ardour that had enabled him to give that proof of his reſolution, and obliging nature to pay the tribute of a flood of tears to ſuch a ſacrifice.

But glory and the intereſt of his country ſoon diſſipated this cloud; and his mind, freed from the dread of ſuch painful ſcenes of tenderneſs, reſumed its wonted vigour, and entered upon the cares of his great undertaking with the moſt indefatigable aſſiduity. But I continued not in his poſſeſſion to ſee the effects of theſe cares; ſuch objects as I was deſigned for occurred too frequently, to the firſt of whom it fell to my lot to be given. I told you that I took a view of his heart. Never was honour more firmly eſtabliſhed on the principles of virtue than there. To ſelect any one inſtance would be injuſtice to the reſt. All was uniformly great and good.

My next maſter was one of the pillars of military glory, who had contributed a leg, an arm, and the ſcalp of his head to raiſe the trophies of the *French* in *America*. Though he was de-

ſtitute

ſtitute of almoſt every comfort which nature really ſtands in need of, his firſt care, on the acquiſition of ſuch a treaſure as I was to him, was to gratify the artificial wants of luxury. He went directly to a gin-ſhop, where he *changed* me for a quartern of that liquid fire; the taſte of which was too pleaſing to his palate, and the warmth to comfortable to his heart, for him to be ſatisfied with ſo little. Quartern followed quartern, till every ſenſe was intoxicated, and he fell *dead drunk* on the floor, when his good-natured hoſt had him kindly laid to ſleep off his debauch on the next dunghill, firſt taking care to prevent his fellow-inhabitants of the ſtreets from robbing him of the reſt of his treaſure, by picking his pocket of it himſelf.—The ſcenes I ſaw in this ſervice were all of the ſame kind, but I was ſoon relieved from the pain of them, my maſter giving me as a preſent to an officer of the cuſtoms that very night.——By this faithful ſteward of the publick, I was next morning given to the factor to a gang of ſmugglers, to be laid out for him in lace in *Flanders*, whither he was juſt going on the affairs of his profeſſion. With this induſtrious trader I went as far as *Harwich*, where, while they waited for the tide, he loſt me, at a game of cribbage, to a perſon who was going over with him.

My new maſter was *honeſt Aminadab*, her Grace's agent, whom I have mentioned to you before. As ſoon as they had done playing, my maſter took a walk upon the beach with a perſon who ſtrongly reſembled him, and whom I found to be his ſon. 'I wiſh (ſaid the father) 'that we were ſafe at our journey's end; for, 'though I have planned matters ſo well that I 'think there can be no danger, the immenſe conſequence

'sequence at ſtake muſt make me anxious.'—— 'I do not underſtand you (replied the ſon:) I 'thought this was but ſuch a journey as I have 'often known you take, and that you were going 'no farther than *Holland*, on ſome buſineſs of 'her Grace's.'——'She thinks ſo indeed (re- 'turned the father;) nor would I have her think 'otherwiſe as yet: but I do not deſign ever to ſee 'her face more. I am now, my ſon, arrived at 'the height of my wiſhes, being poſſeſſed of wealth 'beyond my moſt ſanguine hopes. For you muſt 'know, that having gained the confidence of this 'woman by many ſervices, I at length ſuggeſted 'it to her, that the beſt way for her to make the 'moſt profit of the great wealth ſhe had amaſſed, 'would be to ſend it to *Holland*, by ſome truſty 'perſon, who ſhould bring it over again from 'thence, to ſave appearances, and ſubſcribe it 'here, in ſome fictitious name, to the ſupplies 'given for the defenſe of *Germany*, now that her's, 'and the intrigues of ſome other great perſons, 'had baffled the ſchemes of œconomy which 'the managers had attempted in vain to eſtabliſh, 'and obliged them to come into our own terms. '——She took the hint, for it was a moſt 'plauſible one, and immediately inſiſted that I 'ſhould negociate the affair for her, giving me 'one hundred thouſand pounds for that pur- 'poſe.

'This was what I wanted, and had been al- 'ways ſcheming for, having ever remitted my 'money, as faſt as I could make any, into *Hol- 'land*, that I might be able to ſeiſe ſuch an happy 'opportunity as this, at a moment's warning. ——'*But you cannot think, father, of ſtaying in*

'Hol-

'HOLLAND. *You will be immediately purſued thither.*'——'In *Holland*, fool! no, nor in the 'ſmoke of *Europe* at all! I deſign to ſet out for '*Africa* without a moment's loſs; and hope to be 'far enough out of her reach, or that of any Chri-'ſtian power, before ſhe can ſuſpect any thing of 'my flight. And it will heighten the pleaſure of 'my ſucceſs, to think, that, while I am ſailing to 'a land of circumciſion, ſhe will ſit in anxious 'expectation of my return.'

'*But, father, is it not injuſtice to deceive her 'confidence, and rob her of ſo great a ſum of 'money?*'

'Injuſtice, fool! injuſtice to a Chriſtian! Say 'ſuch another word and I diſcard you; diſclaim 'you for ever! Thy converſe with theſe *Gentiles* 'has debauched thy faith. What do we mix with 'them; what do we ſerve them; what do we 'bear their abomination, their inſults for, but 'to make our own advantage of them? Fools! 'vain preſumptuous fools! to imagine that any 'benefits, any gratitude can bind us to them; or 'change the innate hatred of our ſouls to a ſect 'that has been the cauſe of our diſperſion and 'ruin. But, to ſilence thy weak ſcruples about 'injuſtice with a word, have I not the authority 'of our holy Scripture, the example of our great 'prophet *Moſes* himſelf, for what I do, who bor-'rowed the wealth of the *Egyptians*, without a 'deſign of ever returning it, to pay the children 'of *Iſrael* for the labours they had been put to 'by their oppreſſors, and enrich them when they 'ſhould arrive at the land of promiſe?——And 'is not this my caſe? have I not laboured hourly 'for this Gentile woman without payment? 'Did not ſhe join to defraud our people of a

'greater

'greater ſum than this, to which my mite was 'added too, under the pretence of procuring us 'a ſettlement! and did ſhe not refuſe to return 'it, when the attempt failed of ſucceſs! What 'then is this but a juſt retaliation? a fulfilling 'of our law, that ſays, *An eye for an eye, and a 'tooth for a tooth?* And do I not want her wealth 'to make my ſettlement happy, in the land of my 'forefathers?' —— The ſon had too high a reverence for the judgement of his father, to offer any reply, but yielded to the conviction of arguments ſo concluſive. By this time the wind and tide ſerved for us: we arrived in *Holland* without any thing remarkable, except I ſhould take notice to you of the ſordid hypocriſy of my maſter as ſuch, who, not to violate the cuſtoms of his race, made a pretence of poverty, to get his paſſage without expenſe.

CHAP. XVIII.

They arrive at the HAGUE. *Political Converſation between a* DUTCHMAN *and a* JEW. *They differ in opinion.* AMINADAB *leaves his friend* VAN HOGAN *in great diſtreſs.*

AS ſoon as we arrived at the *Hague*, my maſter ſet his ſon to prepare for their immediate departure, while he went himſelf, for a moment, to ſpeak to one of the principal members of the States.

There was little ceremony between a Dutchman and a Jew, but entering directly upon buſineſs, 'My frind *Aminadab*, (ſaid his *mightineſs*)' 'I am

'I am glad to ſee you; I hope you have brought 'us good news; and that there is a ſtop put to 'the inſolence of thoſe *Engliſh* pirates, who, in a 'manner, block up our ports, and have almoſt 'ruined our trade.

'Really, my friend *Van Hogan*, (replied my 'maſter) I am ſorry that I cannot give you any 'ſatisfactory account of that affair. For ſuch is 'the perverſeneſs of people in power there 'at preſent, that they will not liſten to any ar-'guments.'——'*Will they not take money?*'—— 'No, indeed; nor does the boldeſt of us all 'know how to offer it with ſafety, it was re-'jected with ſuch indignant rage the laſt time; 'though in truth the offer was a tempting one. 'I have ſeen the day, and that not very long 'ſince, when half the ſum would have done 'twice as much. But matters are moſt ſtrangely 'altered of late. They have got a manager, 'who neither drinks nor games, keeps running 'horſes, nor whores, nor lives above his private 'fortune, and therefore has not ſuch preſſing de-'mands for money, as uſed to make our nego-'ciators go on ſo ſmoothly with others for-'merly.'

'*Death! what ſhall we do? Is the whole court 'corrupted by this example? are they all infected 'with ſuch a ſtrange madneſs?*'

'No, it is not gone ſo far as that yet; and it 'is to be hoped that the example of a few will 'not be able to do ſo much; and that, when the 'novelty of this humour wears off a little, it will 'go out of faſhion inſenſibly, and things return to 'their old courſe. This is ſuppoſing the worſt, 'that the engines now at work to overturn this 'new *ſet* ſhould miſcarry.

'*But*

'*But what muſt we do in the mean time? We ſhall be ruined before that may happen. We muſt declare war, and do ourſelves juſtice.*'

'But may not the remedy there be worſe than the diſeaſe? Are your affairs in ſuch a condition as to entitle you to take ſuch a ſtep? Conſider what a mighty naval force they have at this time! Conſider how you will be able to reſiſt it.'

'*That is the thing, the only thing, that has kept us quiet ſo long! But ſomething muſt be done; another* AMBOYNA *affair, or ſome ſuch ſtroke, muſt bring us ſatisfaction, and revenge too.*'

'Take care, my friend; be cautious what you do: this is no time for ſuch ſtrokes; nor are the preſent governours ſuch people as thoſe who ſuffered them ſo tamely: they will be apt to return the ſtroke, in a manner that may be attended with conſequences too dreadful to be hazarded. I hate thoſe haughty Iſlanders as much as you; except ſome few particulars, the ſenſe of the whole nation has ever been againſt us; nor would they ſuffer us among them now, but that we have availed ourſelves ſo well of the favour of thoſe few, as to get the command of almoſt all the money in the kingdom into our own hands, ſo that now they dare not provoke us too far; though I own, I do ſuſpect that the deſign of the preſent rulers is to get out of our power as ſoon as this war is over, if our old friends do not counteract their deſigns.'

'*But all this time this talking ſignifies nothing to our affairs; what do they ſay to them? What reaſons do they give for encouraging theſe outrages, in breach of treaties, and contempt of juſtice?*'

'In

'In truth, my friend, a great many, that are 'more juſt than agreeable; more eaſily exclaimed 'againſt than refuted. In anſwer to your al-'ledging the faith of treaties, they inſiſt, that 'they ſtrictly obſerve the ſenſe and ſpirit of them, 'while you only cavil about the words, it being 'abſurd to think, that any nation ſhould bind up 'its own hands in the manner you pretend; or, 'even if that was the meaning of the treaty, at 'the time when it was made, that your abuſe of 'the indulgence given by it makes it neceſſary to 'retract it now: and they expreſs the moſt indig-'nant ſurpriſe at your inſiſting ſo ſtrongly upon 'one article, which, at beſt, is but doubtful, and 'would be in itſelf abſurd, in the ſenſe you wreſt 'it to, while you break through ſo many, the 'meaning of which you do not even pretend to 'diſpute.'

'*Then we will diſpute no longer about them; we 'will enforce their obſervation by the ſame methods 'that originally obtained them.*'——'Aye, if that 'could be; but, my friend, I cannot flatter you; 'I am afraid thoſe means are out of your power; 'you were then really *mighty ſtates*, reſpectable 'for your power, and dreadful for your valour: 'but the caſe is now altered—I need not ſay 'how.'

'*Ungrateful* ENGLISH! *to forget how we reſcued 'them from popery and ſlavery, but the other day; 'had it not been for us, they would, at beſt, have 'been but ſlaves to* FRANCE.'

'The very charge they make againſt you, 'who, they ſay, could never have reſiſted the 'power of *Spain*, or eſtabliſhed your liberties, 'if their queen *Eliſabeth* had not hearkened to 'the cries of *your poor, diſtreſſed ſtates*. As for

'the

'the affair you mention, though they do not 'deny the benefit, they take off from the obli- 'gation, by attributing it to ſelf-intereſted mo- 'tives, as, they ſay, you were convinced that, if 'any thing happened to them, you muſt ſink of 'courſe; beſides, that you have been amply paid 'for this, by the immenſe expenſe of blood and 'treaſure with which they eſtabliſhed your barrier 'in the late wars, which they evidently entered 'into on your accounts, to the neglect of their 'own intereſt.

'In a word, my friend, there is ſo much truth 'in what they ſay, that I would not adviſe you 'to inſiſt upon theſe points any more.'——'*Con- 'found the points! and the memories that rip them up 'ſo! What ſhall we do? I myſelf loſt a ſhip laſt 'week, worth fifty thouſand ducats; though all the 'precautions poſſible were taken, as ſending her pa- 'pers by another ſhip, ſupplying her with falſe bills 'of lading, falſe clearances, falſe conſignments; in 'ſhort, every thing that human art could deviſe.*'

'And I know ſhe was as well ſworn for to pre- 'vent her being condemned, as human conſcience 'could ſwear; but nothing could elude the cap- 'tors, or deceive or influence the judges; but 'was ſhe not inſured?'

'*Not a ducat; there is nothing to be got by inſur- 'ing, except the ſhips are to be caſt away. O my 'ſhip! my ſhip! I will have war.*'——'And then 'all your ſhips go at once.'——'*I am diſtracted! 'what ſhall we do?*'

'My friend, the beſt, the only advice I can 'give you, is to put a ſtop to this trade, and 'open your eyes to your true intereſt. I hate 'the *Engliſh* as much as you poſſibly can; but

'that

'that ſhould not make me ruin myſelf to be re-
'venged on them: they are your only natural
'allies; they firſt delivered, they ſtill ſuſtain you,
'nor can you ſupport the very name of an inde-
'pendent ſtate without them. Provoke them not,
'therefore, too far; I wonder how they have bor'n
'ſo much already; preſerve a fair neutrality; they
'deſpiſe your aſſiſtance, and deſire no more: nor,
'by your avarice, force them to meaſures that muſt
'end in your ruin. If you break with them, whom
'will you apply to? The *French* have given you
'many proofs, that they only wait for an opportu-
'nity to enſlave you: *Spain* has at length learned
'its own intereſt, and will not break with the only
'power whoſe friendſhip can be of real ſervice
'to it: and this very war gives a ſufficient de-
'monſtration of *Auſtrian* faith and gratitude.

'This is the obvious ſituation of things, and
'muſt ſtrike a perſon at the firſt view: but a
'moment's thought will ſhow them even in a
'ſtronger light. For, to grant that *France* and
'*Auſtria* both may be ſincere in their profeſſions
'to you; does not reaſon ſhow you the impru-
'dence of truſting to promiſes, which it is more
'than probable they will not be able to perform?
'For, if you would but diveſt yourſelf of paſſion
'and prejudice for a moment, you will ſee that
'the meaſures entered upon, and the means uſed
'to carry them on, by the *Engliſh*, at this time,
'muſt, in all human appearance, diſappoint the
'ſchemes of their enemies, and retort, upon their
'own heads, the ruin they meditated for others.
'Indeed, the proſpect is ſuch, that it is impoſſible
'to ſay where things will end: every interior
'fund is exhauſted; every external reſource cut
'off; their own trade is abſolutely ruined; the
'trea-

'treaſures of *Spain*, which ſupplied them in their 'laſt wars, are no longer at their command; ſo 'that I can foreſee nothing leſs than their be-'coming bankrupts, not only to themſelves, but 'alſo to every foreign ſtate and individual, whoſe 'avarice of preſent gain has made them ſupply 'their wants.

'Nor is this diſtreſs the effect of chance, or of 'an unfortunate campaign, which the ſucceſs of 'another, or ſome lucky hit, may reſtore: It is 'the natural conſequence of a ſyſtem of meaſures, 'planned with judgement, and proſecuted with vi-'gour, by a miniſter who will not fail to improve 'it to the moſt ſolid advantage. And this I ſay, 'not ſolely from my own opinion. You know I 'have had connexions with perſons able to give 'me the beſt information, by the aſſiſtance of which 'I have traced the progreſs of theſe affairs with 'aſtoniſhment: and therefore, as *England* has thus 'at length ſhown a ſuperiority in council, the uſual 'reſource of patching up a good peace at the end 'of an unſucceſsful war, ſeems alſo to be pre-'cluded from them.

'As for the houſe of *Auſtria*, it has ever been 'a dead weight upon its friends; though its in-'fatuated ingratitude to *England*, which has been 'in a manner its ſole ſupport for near a century, 'will, probably, prevent any other ſtate from 'undertaking ſuch a burthen, ſo that it muſt 'ſink back into its original obſcurity and bar-'bariſm.

'Thus, you ſee, my friend, that depending 'upon *France* is leaning on a broken reed; and 'truſting to *Auſtria*, going for ſhelter under a 'falling wall. What, then, can you do, if the

'*Engliſh* ſhould take offenſe at your behaviour, 'and exert that power which is in their hands, to 'puniſh your avaricious partiality to their ene- 'mies?

'Your power is, in every inſtance, contemp- 'tible; your navy is gone abſolutely to decay; 'your land-forces are filled with old men and chil- 'dren; your officers who might have ſerved you, 'have been obliged to enter into other ſervices for 'bread, to make room for ignorant, indolent, pu- 'ſillanimous burghers, who barter their votes for 'ſuch a ſhare of the ſpoils of the publick. Your 'finances are in the loweſt ſtate of embarraſſment; 'your publick ſpirit, your valour, your virtue, all 'ſwallowed up by ſelfiſhneſs, and ſordid love of 'gain; every thing in the ſituation that ſeems 'to invite ruin, if it is not ſpeedily prevented, 'and that can poſſibly be done no other way than 'as I have mentioned; for, as I have ſaid, and 'muſt again repeat, things are now on a footing 'there that you do not ſeem to be properly aware 'of. The people are ſenſible of their own ſtrength; 'governours exert it properly; and there is a mutual 'confidence between them, that in a manner en- 'ſures ſucceſs to their attempts. Conſider this 'fair, this friendly repreſentation of real facts, 'and you will ſoon ſee the improbability of their 'bearing with you any longer; or ſuffering you 'to defeat the ends of their military efforts, by 'carrying on the trade of their enemies, and ſo 'enabling them to continue the war.'

'*Is it come to this? Are the friends on whom we 'depended moſt turned againſt us? Are you an ad- 'vocate for our enemies, and would perſuade us to 'give up the moſt advantageous branch of trade we 'have?*'

'Why

'Why will you let your paſſion blind you thus? 'I have told you before, and I repeat it again, 'that of all Chriſtians I hate the *Engliſh* moſt, be-'cauſe they reſemble us leaſt; as I love the *Dutch* 'moſt, as you come neareſt to ourſelves both in 'practice and profeſſion. But *my* paſſions never 'blind *me!* and therefore I ſpeak the dictates of 'reaſon. I plead not for them, nor will I flat-'ter you.'

'*Notwithſtanding all their boaſted power, we have 'one ſtroke left to humble them, and we will make it 'directly; we will draw all our money out of their 'funds.*'

'Will you ſo, at a third part loſs? O, *Moſes!* 'what fools are thoſe Chriſtians? Do you not 'ſee that even this ſtroke, as you call it, is guard-'ed againſt? that, apprehenſive of ſuch an at-'tempt, they have lowered the particular funds, 'in which your money chiefly lies, ſo far, that 'the loſs of ſelling out now would be intoler-'able? And whoſe is this money which you 'would draw out? The property of private peo-'ple! Abſurd thought! If it was the money of 'the publick, it would not be ſtrange to ſee it ſa-'crificed to private intereſt; but there is no in-'ſtance in all your ſtory, of private property be-'ing given up voluntarily for the redreſs of pub-'lick wrongs.

'Friend *Hogan*, I am in haſte; my affairs call 'me elſewhere. When I ſhall ſee you again is un-'certain; but my regard would not permit me to 'miſs this opportunity of giving you my advice, 'which I know to be of importance to you. I 'can no longer undertake your affairs in *London*; 'nor would I have another amuſe you with hopes

'that muſt deceive you in the end. While it was 'in my power to ſerve you, I did; I abuſed their 'confidence, I betrayed their ſecrets to you: but 'I can do it no longer, nor can any other to 'effect. Meaſures, as well as men, are changed. '—— Adieu.'

With theſe words my maſter went to ſeek his ſon, leaving his friend *Van Hogan* in the higheſt diſtraction, between the oppoſite impulſes of the ſtrongeſt paſſions that could agitate his ſoul, avarice and fear.

CHAP. XIX.

AMINADAB *bids adieu to her Grace, and ſails with his ſon for* AFRICA. CHRYSAL *remains with a* DUTCH *banker. The principles and conſcience of a good* DUTCHMAN. CHRYSAL *is ſent into* GERMANY. *His opinion of the* DUTCH.

THE young *Iſraelite* met his father punctually, and gave him ſuch an account of his preparations for their flight, that *Aminadab* bleſſed the God of his fathers; and to complete the fullneſs of his harveſt with whatever gleanings he could pick up, he went directly among his *Dutch* friends, and, in pious imitation of the example he had quoted before, borrowed, if not *jewels of gold and jewels of ſilver*, as much coined gold and ſilver as he could, and then going with his ſon to the ſea-ſide, they embarked for their native

native country, in all the exultation of ſucceſsful villainy.

But I went not with them; my *Britiſh* ſhape being of more value in *Europe* than where he was going, my maſter left *me* with his banker, in exchange for the more faſhionable coin of *Spain*, which neighbourhood made better known there. ——— My *Hebrew* maſter had ſcarce left the banker, into whoſe hands he had given me, when in came his *Belgick* friend *Van Hogan*, all aghaſt at the news he had received from him, and ſomething elſe, which had come to his knowledge ſince.

'O, *Mynheer!* (ſaid he) we are all blown 'up and undone! The flood is pouring in upon 'us.'——'What is the matter now, *Mynheer* '(replied the banker) that throws you into this 'ſtrange conſternation? The worms have not 'deſtroyed the dams? nor an earthquake ſwal-'lowed up the Spice-iſlands?'

'*Worſe, worſe, if poſſible, than even theſe! Thoſe 'ſtubborn, proud, ſelf-ſufficient* ENGLISH *have re-'fuſed to releaſe our ſhips that were taken carrying 'ammunition and proviſion to their enemies, ſo that 'we are like not only to loſe thoſe ſhips, but alſo 'the advantage of the trade for the future. What 'can be done to divert this blow?*'——'Really, '*Mynheer*, I cannot tell; the caſe is bad enough, 'to be ſure; but it is no more than was to be 'expected; it was not to be thought that they 'ſhould always remain ſuch paſſive fools as tame-'ly to look on, while we ſupplied their enemies 'with neceſſaries to carry on the war againſt 'them, without endeavouring to put a ſtop to 'us.'

'*Death! I am almoſt mad to hear you talk thus! but, ſay what you will, my* PROVINCE *ſhall never bear it! Why, I have received advice this minute, that all our ſhips, which were freighted for their enemies, will be condemned; and that they are as little moved at our menaces, as they were at our entreaties. If this continues, we ſhall not have a ſhip left in the* TEXEL.'

'Nay, mine ſhall eſcape, I am reſolved.'——'*What will* YOU *do to ſave them?*'——'Not run them into the danger, *Mynheer.*'——'*How, give up the trade!*'——'Moſt certainly, ſince it cannot be carried on with ſafety any longer, and glad that I have come off ſo well.'——'*I do not underſtand you!*'——'You are too warm, *Mynheer*; too ſanguine in the purſuit of your projects. While the ſurpriſe or fright of the late managers in *England* gave me reaſon to think that they would not venture to interrupt us, I carried on as large a trade in this way as any other: but, as ſoon as I ſaw the people recover their ſenſes, and the reins put into other hands, I made a timely retreat with what I had acquired.'——'*And what do you intend to do now?*'——'Keep fair with thoſe whom I can get nothing by breaking with, and throw my buſineſs into another channel; by which management I have already ſucceeded ſo far, that I have got the *Britiſh* remittances to the parties engaged in the preſent war.'——'*Why, there may be ſomething in this; and, if one ſcheme fails, I believe I will even follow your example.*'——'And pray what is that, *Mynheer?*'——'*No more than the old cry of piracy; but this is ſo laid, that it can hardly fail of ſucceſs: we have*

'*bribed*

'*bribed the captain of an Engliſh privateer to riſle a* '*ſhip that we prepare properly for the purpoſe, and* '*then to come into the way of one of our men of war,* '*which is to take him and bring him in, where he is* '*to inſult the government, and vindicate his outrages* '*on the pretence of authority.*'

'And pray, *Mynheer*, what can you propoſe '*from all this, beſide having the fooliſh villain* '*hanged?*'

'*Why the Engliſh, in deteſtation of ſuch villainy,* '*will give up the point of ſearching our ſhips, when* '*they ſee their authority abuſed in ſuch a manner,* '*and ſo we ſhall gain our end that way; or, if* '*they do not, our own people will be ſo enraged at* '*the inſult and injuſtice (as they will believe) of* '*their proceeding, that they will immediately de-* '*clare war againſt them; and ſo we ſhall obtain it* '*the other. The pirate, when he has ſerved our* '*turn, we are to let eſcape; and it will be no great* '*loſs to the world, if half a ſcore of his crew are* '*hanged.*'

'A very juſt and public-ſpirited ſcheme indeed! '*to hang wretches for a crime you hire them to* '*commit, and engage your country in a war that* '*muſt be its ruin, to ſupport your pretenſions to* '*an unjuſtifiable trade.*

'*Mynheer Van Hogan*, I am a *Dutchman* as '*well as you, and attached to my intereſt, as* '*every Dutchman is; but that is, when my in-* '*tereſt is not deſtructive of itſelf in the end, as* '*I muſt tell you I think your preſent ſcheme is,* '*in which I will be no farther concerned, than* '*to try to prevent the evil conſequences of it* '*to the ſtate: the reſt may lie upon your own* '*head.*

'Any thing in the way of trade my conſcience 'complies with without ſcruple; I can take every 'oath that every officer of the cuſtoms in *Europe* 'can impoſe, and not think myſelf bound by any 'of them, further than they agree with my in-'tereſt; I can ſupply the enemies of my country 'with arms to fight againſt ourſelves, provided 'they pay a price extraordinary, that will defray 'my taxes towards the ſupport of the war; I can 'receive circumciſion, ſtroke down my beard, and 'ſwear by *Mahomet*, to avoid a tax at *Smyrna*; I 'can trample upon the croſs, deny *Chriſt*, and call 'myſelf a *Dutchman*, to obtain leave to trade in '*Japan*; but I will not cut the dykes to drown a 'rat at home.

'I am not at leiſure to ſay more on this ſub-'ject, as I am this minute going to remit a ſub-'ſidy to one of the *German* princes, whom *Eng-'land* keeps in pay, to fight for their own preſer-'vation, from the ſame principles that it has long 'fought our battles, and would again, if we did 'not provoke it too far. And when this is done, 'I am to meet the *French* ambaſſador, to ſettle terms 'with him, for remitting the money that is to 'pay the army which fights againſt the allies of '*England*. So that you ſee I am engaged, as you 'may be, if your warmth, unnatural to the cool 'temper of your country, will let you open your 'eyes to your true intereſt.'

Mynheer Van Hogan departed rather ſilenced than ſatisfied with the reaſoning of my maſter, who ſat down to negociate the *hire* of a princi-pality with as much unconcern as he would that of a turnep-field; and bought and ſold the inhabi-tants with as great indifference as he would have bar-

bargained for a caſk of herrings in which ſervice it fell to my lot to be employed.

Greatly as I muſt have edified by the examples and principles, mercantile, moral, civil, and religious, of my late maſter, I muſt own there was ſomething ſo groſly reprobate to every ſenſe of real virtue, even in him, that I was pleaſed to leave him, and, indeed, to be candid, the country in general, where the very profeſſion of virtue was deſpiſed, their only pretenſion to it being the abſence of one vice, hypocriſy, which they rejected as an unneceſſary incumbrance, and acted their groſſeſt enormities without reſerve, or appearance of ſhame.

I now entered on the great theatre of the world, where the ſovereign actor gave a dignity to the ſcenes, and the concerns of individuals were overwhelmed and loſt in the confuſion of nations.

CHAP. XX.

CHRYSAL's remarks on military glory in his journey. Two ſtrange paſſengers taken into the boat. National prejudice and pride break out in perſons not likely to be ſuſpected of ſuch paſſions.

WHILE I was travelling to my deſtined maſter, I had frequent opportunities of ſeeing the fruits of military glory in the miſery of the people, and deſolation of the countries through which I went.

Such ſcenes as theſe cannot be made known by deſcription to an inhabitant of this happy Iſland, whoſe ſituation defends it from the ſudden inroads of foreign enemies, as its natural naval ſtrength does from the more deliberate devaſtations of regular invaſion; and the excellency of its laws, from the yet ſeverer outrages of arbitrary power.

But, amid all this unhappineſs, ſuch is the inſatiate ingratitude of the human heart, that, not content with theſe bleſſings, you are ever complaining, ever graſping at more, till, in the end, you loſe the enjoyment of what you poſſeſs, inſenſible that your ſevereſt wants would be abundance to millions, who dare not even utter a complaint.

It has been ſaid that there is a certain degree of madneſs requiſite to make a great man; that is, to enable humanity to conquer its firſt principle of ſelf-preſervation, to ſlight the moſt terrifying dangers, and ſeek the moſt ſevere evils that interrupt its purſuit of an imaginary good.

The luſt of power, and the intoxication of glory, may ſeem to animate the great to this contradiction of nature; but madneſs alone can ſupport the maſs of mankind through it, who are inſenſible to theſe fantaſtick motives, or at leaſt cannot delude themſelves with the fainteſt hope of ever obtaining them.

Of this I ſaw many inſtances in my journey through the countries that were the ſcene of the preſent war; but one more particularly that happened in one of the *Dutch* travelling boats, early in our journey, made the ſtrongeſt impreſſion on me, and deſerves relation moſt.———There had been an obſtinate battle fought ſome time before between the parties then at war, in which the loſs

was

was ſo ſevere, and ſo equal on both ſides, that, as ſoon as night covered their retreat, each withdrew, concluding itſelf vanquiſhed, though next morning, when they came to a better knowledge of each other's ſituation, they both claimed the victory, while neither thought proper to return to the charge to aſſert that claim.

This uncertainty aggravated the miſery of the unhappy wretches, who were left wounded on the field of battle, as it prevented their receiving relief either from friend or enemy. However, as this dreadful ſcene was acted in the neighbourhood of a neutral city, as ſoon as the firſt terrours of it were a little cooled, the common feelings of humanity moved ſome of the inhabitants to go, and try to relieve as many of the deſerted ſufferers as had not periſhed for want of more timely aſſiſtance, without diſtinction, or reſpect to any party.

Two of thoſe victims of ambition, who had been enemies in the day of battle, but had ſince founded a friendſhip on their common calamity, having been ſupported by the ſame charity, and cured of their wounds in the ſame bed, were now ſtriving to get the mangled remains of their mutilated carcaſſes carried, like other worn-out inſtruments of the war, to their reſpective countries. In their journey they happened to be brought to the water-ſide, where we had juſt taken boat, where they begged in the moſt moving terms to be admitted, but were abſolutely refuſed, till one of the paſſengers, an *Engliſh* gentleman, took compaſſion on their diſtreſs, and paid their fare.

We were all ſeated in the equality uſual in ſuch vehicles, in which, as in a grave, all conditions

are thrown promiſcuouſly together, when, the converſation happening to turn upon the war, which then reigned in moſt parts of *Europe*, and every one ſpeaking variouſly, as prejudice or opinion dictated, the *Engliſhman* chanced to ſay, that he thought ſuch a combination of the greateſt powers of *Europe*, as, at that time, laboured to oppreſs the King of *Bulgaria*, was, to diveſt it of the intricacies of ambition, and bring politicks to the rule of reaſon and juſtice, the moſt injurious, and even baſe abuſe of power, that could be inſtanced in the Chriſtian hiſtory; and he hoped, and indeed doubted not, but that glorious prince, and the bravery and attachment of his ſubjects to his cauſe, that is, really to their own cauſe, would riſe ſuperior to all the attempts of his enemies, and retort upon them the ſtroke which they had perfidiouſly aimed at his ruin, to their diſhonour and confuſion.

The rage into which this reflexion, ſo injurious to the glory of the *Grand Monarque*, threw one of the paſſengers, who thought it levelled particularly at him, though no names had been mentioned, was ſo great, that he could not ſuppreſs it till the gentleman ſhould conclude; but interrupting him, without the leaſt reſpect to his perſonal obligation (for he was one of the two whom I mentioned to have been admitted into the boat on his charity) 'What do you mean, Sir '(ſaid he) by ſaying that this war will end in the 'diſhonour of the King of *France?* Was not 'his motive for entering into it the moſt diſ-'intereſted and glorious? To ſupport the rights 'of ſovereignty, and bring vaſſals to a proper 'ſenſe of duty and obedience? And has not the 'ſucceſs been anſwerable to the greatneſs of his 'deſigns?

'designs? Have not his forces been every-where 'victorious by land and ſea?'

The tone of voice with which theſe words were ſpoken drew the eyes of all preſent upon the ſpeaker, a little, old, withered creature, who wanted both his legs, and ſcarce ſeemed to have ſkin enough, not to ſay fleſh, to cover the remainder of his ſhattered bones, and keep them together. But his ſpirit ſupplied all theſe diſadvantages, and enabled him to raiſe himſelf upon his ſtumps, and caſt a look of the moſt ferocious rage around him, as if he meant to deſtroy whoever dared to diſpute his words.

But his triumph was not long; his fellow-traveller immediately taking him up with equal fury, 'How (ſaid he) the army of *France* ever victo-'rious over *Bulgaria!* What aſſurance can dictate 'ſuch a falſehood? Where have they obtained one 'victory? where have they eſcaped defeat, except 'when the ſuperiority of their numbers have ex-'ceeded all proportion! and, even then, their 'ſlain have generally equalled the whole amount 'of the forces whom they fought with. What 'armies have they loſt already! how few of thoſe 'which remain will ever return to their native 'home, even in the wretched condition that you do!'

Theſe laſt words raiſed a general laugh at the perſon who ſpoke them, he being, if poſſible, in a more maimed and helpleſs condition than the one to whom they were addreſſed, having loſt both his arms, and one of his eyes.

He perceived the motive of their mirth, and ſubmitting to the rebuke with a manly fortitude of mind, 'I ſee, gentlemen (ſaid he) that you 'laugh at my mentioning the wretchedneſs of 'any other living creature with contempt, who 'am

'am such a sufferer myself! but what absurdities 'will not passion hurry men into! and how could 'human patience bear to hear this *Frenchman* 'boast of the victories of his monarch, whose 'forces I myself have assisted to route, at every 'place where I have ever met them.

'You route the forces of my master! (replied 'the other) my master's forces would eat up all 'your master's subjects for a breakfast.'—'I do 'not deny their number, nor their appetites (returned the *Bulgarian)* they leave sufficient evidence of both wherever they go; cruelty and rapine lead forth their armies; famine and desolation mark their marches. Shake not your head 'at me, nor lift up your hand, as you regard your 'life; else, loth as I am to make misery ridiculous, by a quarrel between two such wretches as 'we are, though I have not a hand to strike, with 'my foot will I spurn out your life, and trample 'on your carcase.'

'*Morblieu! compare the mighty* MONARQUE '*of* FRANCE *with a little* GERMAN *king.*'

'You mistake me greatly; I never meant to 'compare them: the greatness of your monarch I 'do not deny, were it not abused to purposes that 'make it a dishonour to *him*, and a misfortune to 'his subjects; whereas, our sovereign is the father 'of his people, and never exerts his power but to 'their advantage.

'Gentlemen, you must forgive my warmth; 'any thing against myself I can despise; but my 'king, my father, I cannot, I will not hear spoken 'of with disrespect, while I have even a voice left 'to assert his cause: I have fought for him—I 'have fought with him: for he does not sit rioting in the debaucheries of a court, while his

'subjects

'subjects are encountering hardships and dangers 'to gratify his vanity or revenge. His quarrels 'are the quarrels of his people; and he fights 'their battles with them! and the only regret I 'feel for the loss of my limbs, is, that I can em-'ploy them no longer in his service, for which I 'would lay down my life this minute with joy, 'could it gain him the least advantage, or was it 'necessary to prove my attachment to him.

'But, since I can no longer have the happiness 'of being of service to him, all I have now to 'do, is to retire to my native country, where his 'paternal care has made such a provision for my 'wants, that I shall wear out my days in content, 'without ever having my prayers for his welfare 'and success disturbed by one repining wish, one 'just complaint.

'But ask this vain-glorious knight-errant if he 'can say so? Did he fight for the preservation of 'his family, his country, and his religion, as I did? 'Did he fight under the conduct of his sovereign 'who personally provided for the necessities, the 'comfort of his men, as I did? Is he sure of a 'peaceful retreat at home, safe from the additional 'distress of want, as I am?

'Not at all: he fought for he knew not what, 'he knew not whom. At a distance from his 'king, who was insensible of his dangers, and 'revelled in delicacies, while his subjects, the 'victims of his ambition, were destitute of the 'common, indispensable necessaries of nature; 'nor has he any other hope of prolonging his mi-'serable days when he gets home, but the wretch's 'last resource of begging, in a country so exhausted 'by the vain tyranny of his master, that charity 'is almost an ineffectual virtue, for want of means

'for its exertion.'——All preſent were ſtruck with the force with which the ſoldier delivered his ſentiments, nor did his antagoniſt attempt any reply; but opening their common wallet, in which the *Bulgarian* carried all their wealth, he took out what belonged to himſelf, ſaying, with a ſneer, 'that ſince his feet were ſo good, he might here-'after uſe them inſtead of hands, for he would 'feed him no longer.'

This poor-ſpirited ſarcaſm was received by the perſon to whom it was applied with a ſmile of diſdain, though it raiſed the idle laughter of the greater part preſent. But the *Engliſhman* received it in another manner, for, drawing out his purſe, he took twenty ducats, and putting them himſelf into the pocket of the *Bulgarian*: 'Accept of theſe, my brother ſoldier (ſaid he) 'to make your journey into your native country 'more convenient, where you cannot meet 'more tender regard from your ſovereign and 'country than your ſenſible attachment to them 'merits. As far as I ſhall go your way I will 'take care of you myſelf, and that will defray 'the expenſe of the reſt of your journey with 'comfort.'

CHAP. XXI.

The hiſtory of the Bulgarian ſoldier. CHRYSAL *is carried to his deſtined maſter.*

THE *Bulgarian* was unable to expreſs his gratitude for this charity, the manner of preſenting which doubled the obligation of it. But the big tear that ſtole in ſilence down his manly

manly cheek, as he bowed his head to his benefactor, ſpoke it with a more affecting eloquence than any words could do; and influenced every perſon preſent ſo much in his favour, as to make them vie in offering him their aſſiſtance.

As ſoon as he recovered utterance. 'Such (ſaid 'he) is the noble benevolence that diſtinguiſhes 'the ſons of liberty! ſuch the generoſity of heart 'that always extends the ready hand of a *Briton*, 'with relief to the diſtreſſed. May heaven pre-'ſerve to your happy nation the bleſſings which 'enable it to exert its virtues, to make them a 'bleſſing to all who want their aſſiſtance. And 'though envy may malign, and ingratitude re-'turn benefits with evil, beneficence finds its re-'ward in its own exertion, in the certainty of a 'retribution from thoſe treaſures which never fail.'

The turn of this ſoldier's diſcourſe, and particularly the laſt part of it, ſeemed ſo much above his preſent appearance, that it raiſed a curioſity in his benefactor to aſk him, 'if he had been bred to 'arms, or how long he had profeſſed the military 'life, and in what ſtation.'

'O, Sir,' (replied he with a ſigh, that ſeemed to tear his heart) 'your queſtion recalls to my 'memory ſcenes that I would willingly forget for 'ever, and obliges me to relate ſuch things as 'would draw tears from *Tartars*, *Pandours*, or the 'crueller ſoldiers of the king of *France*.——— 'I was not bred to arms, nor have I followed the 'military profeſſion long, or in any other rank 'than that which rage and deſpair firſt placed me 'in, when I offered myſelf to my ſovereign, to 'repel the invaders, and revenge the deſolation of 'my bleeding country. My unhappy ſtory is no 'more than this—

'I am

'I am a native of *Bulgaria*, the ſon of a mi-
'niſter of the goſpel, who, obſerving a deſire of
'knowledge in my youth, encouraged and im-
'proved it by his own precepts and example, and
'led my ſtudious mind through the ſublimeſt paths
'of ſcience.

'As ſoon as he ſaw my reſolutions ſufficiently
'eſtabliſhed to be proof againſt the levity of
'youth, and temptations of ſenſe, he yielded to
'my intreaties, and I was admitted into the
'ſacred order of which he was a member, and
'made the perfection of human wiſdom, the
'practice of piety and virtue under the direction
'of the divine word, the buſineſs of my happy
'life. Happy then, indeed! but now the recol-
'lection of that happineſs aggravates my preſent
'miſery in the irrecoverable loſs of it, almoſt to
'deſpair.

'As the religion of the benign Redeemer of
'mankind does not enjoin impoſſibilities, by re-
'quiring us to eradicate paſſions, which are the
'eſſence of our nature, and whoſe indulgence,
'under the direction of reaſon and virtue, is the
'end of our creation, and the baſis of our being,
'and fulfils the firſt divine command, by conti-
'nuing our ſpecies, and increaſing the number of
'his adorers, I obeyed the impulſe of virtuous
'love, and married the daughter of a neighbour-
'ing divine, who completed to me, as I vainly
'thought, the ſum of human happineſs, by a nu-
'merous offspring, which grew upon the knee
'of their aged grandſire, my father, now become
'too feeble for the active duties, while my la-
'bours ſupplied the neceſſaries of life to my con-
'tented family, in which I thus ſtood the happy
'centre of filial and paternal love.

'In

'In this bliſsful ſtate did I advance toward 'heaven, when envy of his glory, and fear of his 'virtues, brought this deſtructive war upon the 'dominions of our ſovereign. O, my father! 'my children! my wife! in one day did I loſe 'you all. Theſe eyes beheld my habitation re-'duced to aſhes, my children maſſacred in the 'wantonneſs of cruelty, in deſpite of the prayers 'of my aged father, whoſe ſnow-white hairs, 'whoſe whole appearance would have ſtruck 'the ruthleſs hearts of the ancient heathen *Gauls* 'with reverence, in deſpite of the cries of my 'beauteous wife, who both begged to draw their 'fury on themſelves, from the defenſeleſs inno-'cents; but all in vain; the murtherers, deaf 'to their cries and intreaties, inſenſible to the 'beauty of the babes, who ſtood ſmiling at the 'ſwords that hung over their heads, firſt butchered 'them as in ſport, then abuſed the perſon of 'my wife to death, and mangled my father's 'breathleſs body, whoſe tender heart the grief 'of ſuch a ſight had burſt, while I, unhappier far 'than any, ſtood looking on bound to a tree, 'with my jaws diſtended with the head of a 'ſpear, and my cheeks cut open thus from ear 'to ear, a Bible being placed before me, and a '*French Prieſt* ſtanding by, encouraging their 'cruelty as meritorious againſt hereticks, and 'inſultingly bidding me *preach now to my con-'gregation*, at the ſame time refuſing me the re-'leaſe of death, which I beſought by all the 'ſigns deſpair could ſuggeſt, and making them 'leave me naked, and whipped till my body 'was all one wound, to periſh by famine and 'grief.

'But

'But heaven had ordained otherwiſe for me; 'ſome of my neighbours, who had eſcaped their 'fury, came, as ſoon as night favoured their fears, 'to learn our fate, and offered any aſſiſtance in 'their power. They unbound me; they buried 'the remains of my ſlaughtered family, and forced 'me from the grave, to their retreat in the woods, 'where they healed my wounds, and ſtrove to 'comfort my diſtreſs. But all their arguments 'would have been too weak to make me ſuffer 'life, had not a deſire of revenge taken poſſeſſion 'of my ſoul, and ſilenced every other thought.

'As ſoon as I had recovered ſtrength, I haſted 'to the army of my ſovereign, where I threw 'myſelf at his feet, and told him all my diſtreſs. 'He heard me with pity; he ſhed tears at my 'ſad ſtory, and raiſing me with his own hand, '*Be comforted, my brother*' (ſaid the mighty monarch to his meaneſt ſubject) '*be comforted, the 'loſſes of the juſt will be repaid in heaven; there 'thy happy family expect thine arrival; there thy 'virtues will be rewarded, thy joys complete; when 'the evils of this world, which endure but for a 'moment, ſhall be at an end. The horrours of war 'agree not with the innocence of your paſt life, or 'the humane tenderneſs of your diſpoſition, and would 'but aggravate your griefs, by the unhappy, unavoidable repetition of like ſcenes of ruin. Retire, 'therefore, to my capital, where all the comforts of 'life ſhall be provided for you, to alleviate your diſtreſs, while your prayers aſſiſt us in the day of 'battle.*'

'I heard his words with reverence, but his 'virtue was too ſublime for my imitation. I 'fell again at his feet, and wringing my hands,

'O Sir,

'O Sir (ſaid I) this goodneſs is too great for 'man; alas, I am unable to obey its dictates; 'my ſoul languiſhes for vengeance: O, bear with 'human infirmity, and permit me to fight under 'thy command. Heaven heard not my prayers, 'or it would have prevented my ruin; let me 'then have recourſe to other methods for redreſs; 'let me contribute my poor help to thy victories, 'to the deliverance of my country: I die this 'moment if my prayer is refuſed.'

'*Be thou my companion in this juſt war,*' (ſaid my ſovereign, raiſing me up again) '*and, ſince thy 'ſacred function muſt not be diſgraced with any 'other rank, fight by my ſide, and lead me to ſuc-'ceſs.*'

'From that day have I followed his ſteps in 'the field of battle, at an aweful diſtance; and 'been witneſs to all the wonders of his conduct 'and valour; till in the late action a cannon 'ſhot took off both my arms, as I had the ho-'nour of holding my own horſe for him to mount, 'his having been killed under him as I fought by 'his ſide.

'He expreſſed concern at my misfortune, and 'commanded me to retire to his own tent; but 'an *Auſtrian* huſſar, the moment after, cut me 'down with his ſabre, though in the unpreme-'ditated inſtinct of ſelf-preſervation I had held 'up both my bleeding ſtumps to ward the blow.

'Here I lay among my fellow-ſharers in the 'common calamity, in ſubmiſſive expectation of 'the ſtroke of fate, from the horſes feet, or the 'pillagers of the field. But heaven had other-'wiſe ordained; and, after two days weltering 'in my blood, I was relieved, and recovered by 'charity, to the condition in which you ſee me,

'and

'and am now ſtriving to go and avail myſelf 'of my maſter's humane offer, which your bene-'volence enables me to do with comfort.

'This fellow-ſufferer, whoſe arrogance firſt 'prompted me to ſpeak, has been a ſharer with 'me alſo in the charity which relieved us; 'where our common calamity created a kind of 'friendſhip between us, and our neceſſities ſug-'geſted it to us to combine the remains of our 'limbs, for mutual aſſiſtance, he preparing our 'victuals, and feeding me, while I have carried, 'not only our poor baggage, but him alſo, upon 'my back.

'But that alliance is at an end; not becauſe 'the relief which you ſo generouſly have beſtow-'ed upon me may ſeem to free me from the ne-'ceſſity of his aſſiſtance, for I muſt beg your leave 'to divide it with him, as half is ſufficient for me, 'but that my ſoul abhors the principle which firſt 'led him into this diſtreſs, and which even ſuch 'ſufferings cannot ſhow the impiousabſurdity of; 'and diſclaims connexion with the enemy of my 'gracious ſovereign, who would thus malign his 'glory, when he cannot deny nor longer reſiſt 'the virtues that have raiſed it.'

By this time we arrived at the place where I was to be delivered to the miniſter of my deſtined maſter, who immediately carried me to him.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXII.

How CHRYSAL *found his maſter employed. The grandeur and happineſs of abſolute power. His cares for the augmentation and ſupport of his revenues. His rage at the inſolence of liberty, punctuality to his engagements, and reſolution to maintain the conſequence of his rank.*

WE found him buſied in reviewing ſome new levies, which he had juſt raiſed, to hire out to the beſt bidder of the parties then engaged in war, without ever examining the juſtice of the cauſe, or conſidering any other motive or conſequence, than juſt the immediate price he was to receive, out of which he bounteouſly allowed them a pittance to ſupport the lives ſo uſeful to him.

As ſoon as the men were ordered to their quarters, his highneſs retired with his miniſter, who, preſenting the bag in which *we* were, with a bent knee, 'The ſubſidy, may it pleaſe your 'moſt ſerene higneſs, from *England*' (ſaid he.) ——'*It is well* (replied the ſovereign) *but upon* 'what terms?'——'The ſame your highneſs had 'laſt year.'——'*No more! They ſhall not have my* 'men! *I can have more elſewhere!* FRANCE *offers* 'better.'——'Then I muſt return this money, 'pleaſe your highneſs.'——'*Return it! No; for* 'what?'———'If your highneſs does not like 'the terms, you will not keep the money, I pre-'ſume.'———'*Fool, but I will! Such laws may* 'bind you ſubject wretches; *but ſovereign princes* 'are

'*are above them*; *laws are not made for us.*'——
'I humbly implore your highneſs's pardon for
'my ignorance; then you will give thoſe troops
'to FRANCE.'——'*Yes, when* FRANCE *pays me*
'*for them.*'——'But in the mean time, as ENG-
'LAND has already paid your highneſs, they
'will depend upon them, and conſequently ſuffer
'by the diſappointment.'—'*Then let them prize*
'*my friendſhip properly another time*; *I am not*
'*obliged to ſupport kings upon their thrones for no-*
'*thing*; *I may invade as well as guard againſt in-*
'*vaſion. They ſhall know whom they dare offend.*'

'Something has provoked your highneſs's
'wrath, which I am afraid my ignorance ſhould
'aggravate.'

'*I will teach the reſpect that's due to ſovereignty.*
'*I am not king of* ENGLAND, *curbed in my will,*
'*and limited in power*; *my ſubjects are my ſlaves*;
'*they dare not think of any other law beſides my*
'*pleaſure. Death! can you think it! My miniſter*
'*at the court of* ENGLAND *writes me word, that a*
'*baſe plebeian merchant has had the aſſurance to de-*
'*mand payment for the goods he ſent me laſt year, for*
'*the ſupport and ſplendour of my court*; *and, on its*
'*not being deducted from the ſubſidy, to refuſe ſup-*
'*plying me this year, and even to threaten complain-*
'*ing to their parliament.*

'*Now, judge you if a ſovereign prince, whoſe*
'*forces are their ſecurity in time of danger, can*
'*brook ſuch inſolence. And, to conclude the whole,*
'*what did the* ENGLISH *miniſter ſay, when my mi-*
'*niſter remonſtrated with him upon this affair, but*
'*that, by the laws of* ENGLAND, *no man could be*
'*compelled to part with his property againſt his will,*
'*or hindered to complain, if he thought himſelf ag-*
'*grieved:*

'*grieved: and that the laws were ſacred, and muſt*
'*not be infringed. Think, now, if I can with honour*
'*keep an alliance with ſuch people, till I have re-*
'*ceived ſatisfaction: I, whoſe ſubjects have no*
'*property nor laws but my will, to be treated in*
'*ſuch a manner by a vile trader—it is not to be*
'*bor'n.*'

'I am very ſorry to hear of this affair, and
'particularly at this time; becauſe, if your high-
'neſs ſhould break with the *Engliſh* now, when
'they think they want your men, they may be
'provoked never to deal with your highneſs for
'them another time, when they have no other
'occaſion for them, only to do your highneſs
'a ſervice.'

'*Why, there may be ſomething in that; and there-*
'*fore, if they will ſend me the merchandiſe I want,*
'*and raiſe the ſubſidy, perhaps I may not refuſe them*
'*the ſuccours they deſire.*'

'How much does your highneſs require to have
'the ſubſidy raiſed?'

'*I have not thought of that yet. But ſurely they*
'*cannot be ſo unreaſonable as to expect my men at*
'*the ſame rate, now in time of danger, as they had*
'*them in peace, when there was nothing at all for*
'*them to do, but they could work at their trades at*
'*home, and maintain themſelves without wearing out*
'*their uniform, or any other expenſe to me?*'——
'That is very true; if your highneſs was not to
'conſider at the ſame time, that even then they
'paid you as much as if it was a time of war,
'and indeed more than any other nation will, or
'can, pay you now; for, as to the promiſes of
'*France*, they are not to be depended on at all,
'whereas *England* always pays well.'

'*I do not care! What I have gotten here I will keep, by way of repriſal for the inſult offered to my honour; and, if they will have my troops, they ſhall pay me over again for them: ſo, ſay no more on that head.*'

'I ſubmit; but how will your highneſs ſubſiſt them at home in the mean time? There muſt be an immediate remittance made of ſome of this money to *Holland*, to buy proviſions, for your magazines are quite exhauſted, and the conſtant demand for men, to ſupply the troops you have agreed for, and recruit the loſſes they have ſuſtained in battle, have not left ſufficient to cultivate the land.'

'*Then let them ſtarve! I ſhall not expend a penny to ſupport them. Could not the women and children work? I wonder you ſhould dare to mention ſuch a thing. If I lay out this money, what is to ſupport the ſplendour of my court, ſince this* ENGLISHMAN *has refuſed to ſupply me?*'

'I humbly beg your highneſs's pardon, but what anſwer am I to ſend to the *Engliſh*, who have demanded that the troops ſhould march directly?'

'*Why, that I am ſo enraged at the inſult offered to me by that merchant, that I will not let a man of them ſtir till I have ſatisfaction, and a new ſubſidy; and that I keep this one in the mean time, to make up the deficiencies in former years.*'

'Deficiencies! I do not underſtand your highneſs; the ſubſidies have been always regularly paid.'

'*Obey my commands! I ſay there have been deficiencies, which I am not at leiſure to explain in this emergency, but I ſuppoſe my word will be taken for it.*'

'I

'I fear your highneſs does not attend to the 'change which has lately been in *England*. The 'people who might have taken ſuch an anſwer 'are now out of power; and their ſucceſſors 'are the very men who have always been againſt 'dealing with your highneſs, and may now take 'the advantage of this breach of faith, for ſuch 'I well know they will call it, to throw off your 'alliance for ever: for the people begin to ſee 'their own ſtrength, and their governours to 'exert it properly, and ſhow them that they 'want no foreign aſſiſtance. And, as a proof of 'this, at this very time, when their enemies not 'only talk of invading them more confidently 'than ever, but alſo have gone ſo far as to make 'preparations for ſuch an attempt, ſo far from 'being diffident of their own ſtrength, or in-'timidated to call for help, they have actually 'ſent a powerful body of their troops abroad, 'and are carrying on the war with vigour and 'ſucceſs in every quarter of the world; ſatisfied 'that the inhabitants who remain at home are 'able to defend their country, and repel every 'attempt that may be made againſt it. And 'this change in their meaſures ſhould give a 'caution how the perſons who effected it are 'provoked.'

'*I care not*; *I will make the experiment*; *but* '*do you draw up your deſpatches in ſuch a manner*, '*that we may have it in our power to explain* '*them to whatever ſenſe ſhall ſuit us beſt. In the* '*mean time*, *we muſt keep up our appearance of* '*treating with* FRANCE, *to give a weight to our* '*deſigns.*'

The miniſter was prevented from replying, by the enterance of the muſter-maſter, who had been

juſt making a ſurvey, and taking an account of every man, *able to bear arms*, in his highneſs's territories.

'Well (ſaid his highneſs) how do your muſ-'ters anſwer? Shall I be able to enlarge the 'number of my troops this year?'——'May it 'pleaſe your moſt ſerene highneſs (replied the 'officer) here is the return, in which I have taken 'down every man from twelve to ſeventy, accord-'ing to your commands.'——'*And how do they 'anſwer? Better than laſt year, I hope: there muſt 'be a great many boys have grown up ſince.*'—'The 'liſt, indeed, looks almoſt as full as uſual; but the 'late battles have ſo drained us of men to fill up 'the troops, that there are ſcarce any but boys 'left at home; and thoſe have been ſo badly fed 'of late, that their ſize does not anſwer their 'years, and they look wretchedly beſides. So that, 'upon the whole, I fear your highneſs will find it 'very difficult to complete the forces already eſta-'bliſhed, much more to raiſe any new.'

'*I muſt, I will raiſe them! Tell me not of dif-'ficulties! What I command ſhall be performed! If 'there are not men, the women ſhall put on the men's 'clothes and go; I will not be ſhortened of my reve-'nue; they ſhall fight themſelves, ſince they have not 'bred ſoldiers for me.*'

'This, pleaſe your highneſs, is a liſt of the diſ-'abled men, who are not able to ſupport them-'ſelves by any kind of work, having loſt their 'limbs in the wars.'

'*Diſabled men! I thought I ordered you not to 'exchange them. They might have remained in the 'hands of the enemy; ſuch of them, I mean, as are 'not able to breed ſoldiers for me, and cultivate the 'lands: or, ſuch as were not priſoners might have*

'*been*

'been let periſh of their wounds; it would have been 'a mercy to them to ſhorten their miſery.'

'May it pleaſe your highneſs, I obſerved your 'orders, and left a number of ſuch wretches 'unexchanged; but the enemy ſaw into my de-'ſign, and ſent them home, to be rid of the trou-'ble of them: and now they are crying for ſub-'ſiſtence, and demand the arrears of their pay, 'which was ſtopped while they were priſoners. 'The others our ſurgeons took proper care of.'

'Inſolent ſlaves! Demand pay, when they are no 'longer able to earn it! And ſubſiſtence too! They 'learned this impudence from their converſation with 'thoſe Engliſh! It is much they did not demand roaſt 'beef and pudding too!——Hang up half of them, 'the next word of the kind they dare to utter, to ter-'rify the other half to ſtarve in quiet. And at your 'peril let me hear no more of them.

'As for the muſters, I will have them completed; 'man, woman, and child ſhall go! I will make my 'dominions a deſert, before I leſſen my conſequence 'among the ſovereign powers of Europe.'

CHAP. XXIII.

More cares of ſovereignty, and conſequences of grandeur. CHRYSAL *is ſent to market, where he is given to a Jew for bacon.*

HIS highneſs had juſt declared this magnanimous reſolution, when the ſteward of his houſehold entered to let him know, that the butchers and bakers of the next *Hans-town*, from whence his table was ſupplied, had refuſed to ſend him any more proviſions till their bills were paid, as they had heard that he was to receive no more ſubſidies from *England*; and there was ſcarce enough to make out dinner for that day, for the court was very numerous and brilliant, all the princes and princeſſes of the various branches of his highneſs's moſt illuſtrious houſe having come to pay him a viſit of congratulation upon the birth of the moſt ſerene prince his ſon and heir: and that his purveyors had been able to find nothing in his own dominons fit for his table, but bear's fleſh and veniſon; nor even a ſufficient quantity of theſe, the miſery of his people having made them venture to break through his laws, and hunt in his foreſts, to ſave themſelves and their families from periſhing by famine.

His highneſs had hearkened to him without any emotion, or even concern, till he mentioned this outrageous inſult upon his ſovereign authority and pleaſure; but then burſting into a rage, '*Hunt in* '*my foreſts!* (ſaid he.) *Audacious ſlaves! Dearly* '*ſhall they pay for their preſumption! Order my* '*troops*

'*troops to march that way directly! I'll lay the* '*country waſte!*'—'Pleaſe your highneſs (re-'plied the ſteward) that will coſt you the trouble 'of marching your troops: the country is a de-'ſert already.'

'*Who told you that they have been guilty of this* '*inſolence? You ſhould have ſeiſed the author of the* '*report, for not apprehending the criminals.*'

'May it pleaſe your highneſs, they took one 'wretch in the very fact, and have brought him 'here, to receive the ſentence of your pleaſure; 'and the ſtag with him alive, which he found in 'a pit, and borrowed a gun to ſhoot. He pleaded 'hunger, and the cries of a ſtarving family of 'grand-children, for he is an old man, and his 'three ſons have been killed in the wars; but, 'though I own he moved me, I did not preſume 'to let him go.'

'*It is well you did not, or you ſhould have ſuffered* '*in his ſtead. Go, ſtrip him naked, bind him on that* '*ſtag, and then let him looſe with him upon his back* '*into the woods, proclaiming, that no one, upon pain* '*of death, preſume to give him the leaſt relief: he* '*ſhall have hunting enough.*'

'But what will your highneſs have me to do 'about proviſions for the entertainment of the 'princes? I believe they deſign a long viſit, for 'they have brought all the young princes and prin-'ceſſes of their illuſtrious families with them.'

'*I care not! I am not to be diſturbed on ſuch* '*trifles now, when the fate of nations depends on my* '*reſolutions. Let them go home again.*'

'Not faſting, I preſume; for they have already 'ſignified, ſome of them, that they have come 'without their breakfaſts, by calling for refreſh-'ment the moment they arrived; and, indeed, I fear

'the principal motive of this visit of their high-'nesses was want of any thing to eat at home.'

'*Confusion! What can I do? Here, take this* '*money, and send for victuals for them.*'

The sight of a handful of guineas was an agreeable surprise to the steward, who had not heard of the arrival of the subsidy from *England*. He received them with evident pleasure, and I felt no less in being delivered from this scene of sovereignty, of which I was sincerely sick; though, by the change, I fell from being the price of armies to the domestick office of going to market for a morsel of bread, from the glory of causing the slaughter of thousands to the virtue of supporting the lives of a few.

The steward, as soon as he withdrew from the presence of his highness, called the other officers of the household together, and told them, with joy in his countenance, that there was no foundation for the report of their master's breaking with *England*, so that they might look famine in the face for another year; and confirmed the glad tidings, by showing them the gold.

The pleasing sight raised universal joy; they licked their lips, feasted in imagination, and prepared things for getting dinner ready, with all the alacrity of willing minds and keen appetites; while the steward, not caring to trust a commission of that importance to any inferior officer, waited only to wash down a mouldy crust with a draught of sour wine, and then went to market for them himself.

The appearance of things changed as soon as I left the hereditary dominions of his highness, and entered into the little territories of a free state.

Plenty

Plenty was the reward of induſtry, and content ſupplied well the place of grandeur.

As his highneſs's miniſter had preſſing motives to accelerate his negociations, he went directly to the ſeveral dealers in proviſions, and, ordering a comfortable ſupply on the credit of our appearance, returned with the greateſt deſpatch to the diſcharge of the offices of his high employment, in the ceremonials of the court.

In the courſe of theſe tranſactions it fell to my lot to be paid to a Jew, for bacon and ſauſages, the butchers of his religion being held to make the beſt of the latter, as they never cut out the nice bits to eat themſelves.

CHAP. XXIV.

Compariſon between two dealers in fleſh. The celebration of the PASSOVER *in the traditional way, and the method of procuring (human) lambs explained.*

I Now entered into a ſervice, the moſt diametrically oppoſite of any in nature to my laſt; my preſent maſter denying himſelf the very neceſſaries of life, to hide his riches under the appearance of poverty, as my laſt lived in the moſt vain oſtentation of ſplendour, to conceal his poverty under the appearance of riches.

It is difficult to ſay which hypocriſy was moſt abſurd, and contradictory to the immutable laws of moral juſtice: the former baſely ſtealing, as I may ſay, from the publick, that wealth which was ordained to be of advantage to it, and whoſe value ariſes only from its being uſed, by thus ſecreting it in his coffers; and the latter, in gratification of a vanity as unjuſtifiable as that avarice, committing every kind of actual violence to ſupply the want of it.

I here was ſoon initiated into all the myſteries of that lower ſpecies of trade called *Pedling*, which is in a manner engroſſed by thoſe people. Falſe weights and meaſures, adulteration of wares, lying, perjury; in a word, every ſpecies of deceit that can impoſe upon ignorance and credulity, were here reduced into a ſcience, taught by precept, and enforced by example, from the earlieſt exertion of reaſon, to wear off every heſitation

ſitation of conſcience, and make the practice natural and expert.

The beauty of my appearance, for I had hitherto eſcaped mutilation, made my maſter, who was an adept in that art, think it improper to throw me among his diminiſhed heap, as I ſhould but make their loſs the more remarkable. He, therefore, put me into his purſe, to make a ſhow with upon occaſions, and appear as a proof of his innocence of that practice, of which he was too ſtrongly ſuſpected.

The evening after I came into his poſſeſſion happened to be one of their moſt ſolemn feſtivals. My maſter, therefore, who was one of the tribe of *Levi*, retired from buſineſs early, to purify and prepare himſelf for the celebration of the moſt ſecret and myſterious ceremony of their religion.

This was the ſacrifice of the *Paſſover*, which, by a ſecret tradition, never committed to writing, for fear of being betrayed, was changed from the typical offering a lamb, to the real immolation of human blood; for which purpoſe the moſt beautiful children were purchaſed at any expenſe, and under any pretext, from the ignorance of neceſſitous parents, or the perfidious avarice of ſervants, if they could not be obtained by ſtealth, and brought from all parts of *Europe* to theſe ceremonies: it being a long-received opinion, that the original ſacrifice of a lamb was deſigned only for that one occaſion, to conciliate the favour of Heaven to the eſcape of their forefathers out of Egypt; but that, to render it propitious to their reſtoration to their country, and to the conſummation of their promiſed happineſs

and glory, the type muſt be changed for the thing typified, and human blood, in the pureſt ſtate of infant innocence, be offered inſtead of the ineffectual blood of a brute.

But, as ſome traces of natural affection might remain, even in hearts diveſted of the feelings of common humanity, to remove every obſtacle to this practice, and ſtimulate ſuperſtition by hatred and revenge, the children of Chriſtians were appointed for this ſacrifice, and thoſe eſpecially of the ſuperior ranks of life, whoſe pride might be too apt to make them treat the people of the Jews with ſeverity and contempt.

As to other points, the rules laid down in the inſtitution of the *Paſſover* were literally obſerved, in reſpect to the victim, who was to be *without blemiſh, a male of the firſt year*, that is, the firſtborn of his mother, and *to be kept fourteen days before he was ſacrificed*, during which time they fed him with the richeſt food, to raiſe him to the higheſt perfection of his nature.

The place choſen for the celebration of this ceremony, was a ſummer-houſe in a garden belonging to one of the rulers of their ſynagogue, where they all met at the appointed time. As ſoon as they were placed in order, one of the elders ſtood up, and in a long ſpeech declared the occaſion of their meeting, and read the original inſtitution of the *Paſſover*, and then recited the tradition which changed the ſacrifice to be offered, as I ſaid before; concluding with an oath of ſecreſy, which all preſent joined in and confirmed with the moſt dreadful imprecations, and which was to be ſealed by the participation of this horrid myſtery.

When

When he had ended, the victims of that night were produced, their bodies examined for fear of blemiſh, and their primogeniture proved by thoſe who had provided them, and who were re-emburſed their expences before the ſacrifices began, by the general contribution of all preſent.

This method was uſed, that every perſon might have an equal ſhare in the merit of the ſacrifice, as it would be dangerous and too expenſive to provide a *lamb* for every head of a family in the congregation.

The END of the FIRST BOOK.

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE ADVENTURES OF

A GUINEA.

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

The rites are interrupted, and the victims changed. This cleared up without a miracle. The few ſurvivors of the firſt fury brought to publick juſtice.

I See your aſtoniſhment how ſo abſurd an opinion could ever take poſſeſſion of a rational mind, as that the Deity can be pleaſed with the breach of his moſt ſtrict command, and rendered propitious by an action againſt which his ſevereſt vengeance is denounced; yet, ſuch are the errors which the leaſt deviation from the ſtraight paths of reaſon lead to, when ceremony is made the eſſence of religion, and human inventions ſubſtituted in the place of immutable, eternal virtue.

The

The *Devil*, whoever is meant by that moſt comprehenſive name, has long been charged with being the author of this and every other vice and folly, which men are aſhamed of owning themſelves; his temptation being a convenient and comfortable excuſe. But, if man would conſider a little, he muſt bluſh at ſo unfair and ridiculous a charge, and give the poor *Devil* his due, who, among all his failings, has never been ſuſpected of being a fool, and nothing elſe could have deviſed ſuch groſs enormities, ſuch contradictions to the plaineſt rules of common reaſon.

But of this ſtrange inſtitution of human ſacrifices we need ſearch for the original no farther than in the heart of man, who, obſerving, that to inculcate the duty of gratitude, the firſt of moral virtues, the divine will had directed returns of its bleſſings to be made, in the way of oblation or ſacrifice, ſoon perverted the original purity of the inſtitution to his own depravity, and meaſuring the divine beneficence by his capricious avarice, concluded, that the richer the oblation, or the dearer to the offerer, the greater would the merit of it be, and thus he aroſe from a lamb to an hetacomb, from brute to human blood; his eagerneſs to obtain the end, for which he thus ſtrove to bribe the favour of Heaven, hindering him to ſee the abſurdity of the means he uſed.

All things being prepared, the victims were brought to the altar naked and bound, the inſtruments for ſlaying, and the fires for roaſting them (for, horrour to human thought! they were to have feaſted on their fleſh) in readineſs, and the butchers, of whom my maſter was one, juſt going

going to begin their work, when the doors of the houſe were burſt open, with an outcry that heightened the terrors of the guilty wretches, and a band of ſoldiers ruſhed in, and ſeiſed them, as they ſtood ſtupified with the fright.

The horrour of the ſight gave a reſpite to their fate, ſtriking the very hearts of the ſoldiers, though hardened by all the cruelties of war, with an aſtoniſhment that deprived them of power to ſtir for ſome moments. But this was only a ſhort calm, that, as it were, gave time to the ſtorm to gather; for, as they ſtood thus gazing at each other, one of the children cried out, *O, father! father! come and untie my hands! theſe ugly cords hurt me!*

The voice no ſooner ſtruck the ear of the officer, who commanded the party, than, ſtarting in a frenzy, he ran to the child, whom he had not diſtinguiſhed before, as he lay naked on the ground, and ſnatching him up in his arms, '*O my child!* (ſaid he, in an extaſy) *have I found you! have I reſcued you in the very moment when you are going to be ſacrificed by theſe wretches. O my child! my child!*

Theſe words awoke the fury of the ſoldiers, which burſt upon the wretched Jews with a violence not to be reſtrained. The houſe was in a moment a ſcene of horrour beyond deſcription. Moſt of them fell inſtant ſacrifices to this reſiſtleſs rage. Happier far in having ſo ſpeedy an end put to their ſufferings, than the few ſurvivors, who ſaved their lives for that moment, by throwing themſelves among the dead, or taking hold of the children, whom, even in this hurricane of paſſion, the ſoldiers took all care not to hurt.

The

The little reſpite, which this caution gave, the officers improved to pacify the ſoldiers, who would not be perſuaded to ſpare the reſt, by any other argument, but a poſitive aſſurance of having them put to the moſt ſevere and infamous publick death.

When the ſtorm was a little calmed by theſe means, and the living ſeparated from the dead, the pillage of the ſcene was given up to the men, who rifled all, living and dead, with the moſt unrelenting ſeverity, and retaliated their wicked intentions, with exemplary juſtice, on the miſerable criminals, ſtripping them quite naked, and binding them with the very cords which they took off their deſtined victims, who were unbound with the tendereſt care, and carried away till their parents ſhould be diſcovered, or, in caſe that could not be, to be educated at the publick expenſe, as the children of the ſtate, while their intended murtherers were thrown into priſon, till a puniſhment ſhould be appointed ſevere enough for their guilt.

In the confuſion of this affair, I fell into the hands of the officer who had found his child, whoſe paſſions were raiſed ſo high by the recovery of him, that, as ſoon as the plunder was over, he left his charge to another, and retired to ſhare his joy with his diſconſolate wife.

The tenderneſs of this meeting was a juſt reverſe of the former part of the laſt ſcene, where the helpleſs infants were led forth to be ſlaughtered.

As the Jews were ſome of the wealthieſt of the inhabitants, and carried on a great part of the trade of the city, the magiſtrates, to prevent the impu-

imputation of injuſtice, and to ſet the whole affair in a proper light to the world, convened the people early the next morning, where the reſcued infants were produced on one ſide, and the few that remained alive of their intended butchers on the other, when my new maſter, who bore a conſiderable office in the ſtate, beſides his military command, unfolded the whole affair, in a ſhort, but moving ſpeech. He told them, 'that, 'having loſt his only child, the infant there pre-'ſent about a month before, and having been 'informed, when he ſerved in *Poland*, in his 'youth, that the Jews had a cuſtom of ſteal-'ing and ſacrificing, or murthering infants, on 'the night when they celebrated their *Paſſover*, 'he made no ſearch for him, but ſeemed to be-'lieve a ſtory which he had invented himſelf, to 'appeaſe the deſtraction of his wife, that he had 'been killed and devoured by a tame wolf, that 'was kept in the garden of his country-houſe, 'from whence he was ſtolen, watching, in the 'mean time, every motion of the Jews with 'ſuch exactneſs, that he had punctual informa-'tion of their meeting at the place where he 'had ſeiſed them the evening before: where it 'was to be lamented, that the juſt reſentment 'of the ſoldiers had anticipated the ſeverer hand 'of juſtice, and ſaved them from the laws, the 'judgement of which he now demanded againſt 'the remaining few, for himſelf, and for the un-'known parents of the innocent victims whom 'they ſaw before them.'

A roar of univerſal indignation purſued his words, which had inflamed the rage and deteſtation of the people ſo high, that they were with difficulty

difficulty reſtrained from tearing the wretches inſtantly to pieces by the ſame arguments which had ſaved them from the ſoldiers before: nor were the Jews admitted to ſay a word in their own defenſe, for, though none of the infants had been actually murthered that night, yet the intention was beyond controverſy, and, beſide, many of the people, who had formerly loſt their children, now charged them with their murther, with the ſtrongeſt appearance of juſtice.

They were therefore dragged back to priſon, where they lay loaded with chains, till the day of their execution, when they were all publickly burned alive on the very ſpot where they were to have perpetrated their guilt, the houſe being raſed to the ground for that purpoſe, and all the effects of ſuch as were taken in this fact confiſcated to the uſe of the ſtate.

CHAP. II.

A breach of neutrality properly reſented brings CHRYSAL *into a ſervice which he had long been ambitious of. How he found his new maſter employed. The King of Bulgaria's reception of the humbled magiſtrates. His appropriation of money to his own uſe. His reflexions on the ſight of* CHRYSAL.

THIS affair was ſcarce ended, when I changed my maſter again. The city in which I was, had profeſſed a neutrality in the preſent war, but whether yielding to inclination, or biaſſed by private intereſt, the magiſtrates had, on

on many occaſions, ſhown the ſtrongeſt partiality to the enemies of the King of *Bulgaria*.

Of this that heroick prince over-looked many inſtances, in compaſſion to their folly; but, inſtead of inſpiring them with proper ſentiments of gratitude, this moderation only raiſed their injudicious pride ſo high, that, attributing it to fear, they at length proceeded ſo far, as to refuſe him thoſe good offices, which, by the univerſal laws of mankind, he had a right to demand, and treated his meſſengers with diſreſpect.

This drew on them a reſentment that was never raiſed in vain. The king, without deigning to waſte time in complaints, ſent a body of forces directly to their gates, and obliged them to buy their ſafety with contributions, and deprecate his vengeance with ſubmiſſions, which humbled their pride, and terrified their neighbours from being guilty of the like folly.

As theſe contributions were too large to be immediately diſcharged by the ſtate, they were obliged to be levied on the ſubjects; by which means I came into the ſervice of this monarch, to whoſe treaſurer I was paid, by the humbled magiſtrates of the city on their knees.

The many great things which I had heard of this prince had long made me wiſh for ſuch an opportunity of ſeeing him, and of having a knowledge of his heart, that I might be able to judge, whether he really was the great man he appeared to the world, by all his actions, to be. How my expectations were anſwered cannot be explained juſtly, without a particular account of every thing I ſaw, while I was with him; but, as that would be too much for my time, which begins to grow ſhort,

ſhort, I ſhall only give you a few of the moſt remarkable particulars, by which you may form a judgement of the reſt.

The king was walking in his camp before the enterance of his tent, after having finiſhed the buſineſs of the morning, converſing with the moſt engaging affability with his officers, and even the private ſentinels of his guard, redreſſing their complaints, and relieving their wants, when the magiſtrates of the city I had juſt left arrived to pay their contributions, and make ſubmiſſion for their miſbehaviour; for, to humble them the more effectually, he had ordered, that they ſhould attend himſelf.

As ſoon as they approached him, they fell on their knees, and, delivering the money to his treaſurer, implored his pardon, in the moſt abject terms of ſubmiſſion. 'Ariſe (ſaid the monarch) and ceaſe your ſupplications; the poſture and addreſs are both improper to be offered to a man; but the paſſions of the fooliſh are ever in extremes; and your fear ſinks you now as low, as your vain inſolence raiſed you high before. Depart in peace and ſafety; and let this teach you, not to miſtake moderation for fear, another time. But, beware that you offend not ſo again. Mercy, that is amiable in the firſt inſtance, degenerates to folly, if extended to a ſecond.'

The magiſtrates, unable to ſpeak before him, retired in confuſion from his preſence, when turning to his treaſurer, 'Take (ſaid he) ſo much of that money as will repair the loſſes ſuſtained by the innocent inhabitants of the country around their city, and ſee that it is given to

'sufferers, to be applied to that uſe, and none 'other, for I war not with the poor, nor would 'I have my ſteps marked by deſolation, when 'it can poſſibly be avoided. And of the re-'mainder leave the uſual ſum upon my table, for 'my private occaſions.'

Then addreſſing himſelf to the officers around him in general, 'How abject (ſaid he) is the 'ſubmiſſion of the proud! how does guilt humble 'the conſcious heart! Theſe unhappy men, who 'dared not now meet our eyes, but haſted with 'down-caſt looks from the flaſh of juſt indigna-'tion, when laſt we ſaw them, looked us in the 'face with the aſſurance of friendly reſpect, and 'ſeemed happy in the marks of our regard. Let 'this teach us to preſerve the adamantine ſhield 'of a clear conſcience, and terrour can never 'ſtrike a dart through it, to our hearts.'

When the treaſurer went to divide the money, among which I lay, according to his maſter's orders, I was greatly alarmed, for fear I ſhould be torn ſo ſoon from the preſence of this prince; but my anxiety was relieved, when he took that bag in which I was, and gave it to one of his maſter's pages, to lay upon his table.

The many things I had heard of this prince's greatneſs, had, I own, deceived me into expecta-tions of pomp and grandeur in his court, and par-ticularly about his perſon. This made me ſur-priſed to find every thing in a plainneſs far greater than what I had in many inſtances obſerved in private life. But I inſtantly perceived my error, and that his greatneſs was his own, eſtabliſhed on the virtues of his ſoul, and independent of, and ſuperiour to every adventitious circumſtance.

I had

I had not long lain upon his table when he entered alone, and, walking a meditated turn or two acroſs the tent, kneeled down, and offered up his ſoul in the moſt ardent devotion to Heaven.

He then aroſe, with a ſerenely chearful countenance, and, coming to the table, poured out the money, and viewing it earneſtly for a moment, 'O thou ſource of every evil which di-'ſtracts this wretched world (ſaid he) let me 'not be infected by thy poiſon; let not my 'heart conceive a fondneſs for thee, further than 'what thy native value of enabling it to do 'good, juſtly intitles thee to: I am yet free 'from thy infatuation; nor have ever ſuffered 'avarice to tempt me to deſire thee, by impro-'per means, nor vain luxury, or pride, to abuſe 'thee by profuſion. This pittance only do I call 'my own, which I devote to the divine author of 'all the benefits and mercies of my life, in grateful 'return, by ſupplying with it the neceſſities of my 'diſtreſſed fellow-creatures.'

Then taking an handful of it, to put into his pocket, and happening to obſerve my ſhape, he took me up, and looking attentively at me, 'Is 'there no corner of the earth (ſaid he) where 'the wealth of Britain is not diſperſed? If its 'commerce collects the produce of every climate 'under heaven, its munificence does alſo diffuſe 'its riches as far. Great and happy nation! 'wer't thou but ſenſible of the bleſſings of thy 'condition—but the time is come, when thou 'openeſt thine eyes to thine own intereſt, and 'feeleſt the mightineſs of thy ſtrength. How 'great is the power of true wiſdom! how happy the

'the people who have a good man for their 'guide.'

Saying this, he put us into his pocket, and, as ſoon as it was dark, wrapped himſelf in a cloak, and went out privately to take a view of his camp, in a diſguiſe that ſecured him from miſinformation or deceit.

CHAP. III.

The King takes a view of his camp in diſguiſe. The exalted pleaſure he received in the various occurrences of his walk. He gains a great victory. His conduct in and after the battle.

THE notion I had formed of a camp, from the effects which I had ſeen of war, made me expect a ſcene of tumult and confuſion. But how was I ſurpriſed here to find every thing as regular and tranquil as in the beſt governed city in the midſt of peace!

My maſter had not walked far, when ſome converſation, that ſeemed to be carried on with warmth in one of the tents, catching his ear, he ſtopped to liſten what might be the ſubject of it. 'I imagine (ſaid a voice within) that we ſhall have 'a battle ſoon: the chearfulneſs of the king's 'looks, and the more than common ſpirits he has 'been in for theſe few days, are certain ſigns that 'he has ſome great things in view. I always ob-'ſerve him ſo before a battle.'

'The ſooner it comes the better (replied an-'other) I only wiſh that our forces were not ſo

'overmatched in numbers; not that I fear ſucceſs 'when he is with us; but that we may be able 'to give them a total defeat at once, and ſo pre- 'vent their making head again. For ſuch is the 'inequality at preſent, that while we are killing 'half of them the other half eſcape; and, though 'what we deſtroy exceeds the number of our own 'army, yet another army of the runaways ſtill 'remains to give us more trouble. But, however, 'we muſt only do our duty, and kill them all one 'after another.'

'And ſo we will, brother (continued the 'other) if it pleaſe God to preſerve our king to 'us; for while we have him we can fear no- 'thing. The number of our enemies only in- 'creaſes the glory of vanquiſhing them. Indeed, 'I wonder how they can ſtand before us even as 'they do; wretches that are dragged to the war 'againſt their inclination, who have no intereſt 'in the event, no attachment to their leaders! 'But what attachment ſhould they have to ſuch 'leaders, who ſhow no regard to their diſtreſſes, 'nor make any proviſion for their wants, but juſt 'drive them to battle, like oxen to the ſlaughter, 'and, when it is over, take no further care about 'them, but let them periſh by famine, if they 'cannot relieve themſelves by plundering the 'unhappy countries, friends or enemies alike, 'through which they go!'

'Well, brother (returned a third voice) thank 'God that is not our caſe; we follow a leader 'who is a father to his ſoldiers, and provides for 'all their occaſions. We fight for ourſelves and 'our families, for our laws and religion, and are 'ſure that he will ſupport us in the enjoyment of 'them, when he has diſappointed the deſigns of

'his.

'his enemies, and reſtored peace to his people: 'but if we are to fight to-morrow we had better 'take our reſt to-night, to make us freſh and 'ſtrong for the battle. 'God bleſs and preſerve 'our king; whilſt his care watches over us, we 'can ſleep in ſafety in the midſt of our enemies.'

This genuine tribute of praiſe melted the heart of the King with the ſublimeſt delight, and drew the tear of tenderneſs from his eye. 'O 'my God! (ſaid he, when the voices ceaſed) 'enable me to protect this people, and to bring 'this juſt war to an happy end, that they may 'enjoy the fruit of their virtues.'—He then continued his progreſs, in which he met many ſuch occaſions of conſcious pleaſure. When he ſaw that all things were in proper order in the camp, his next care was to viſit the quarters of the wounded and ſick, for he would not truſt them to any perſon, where he could poſſibly attend to them himſelf.

The manner in which all things were ordered here, for the relief and comfort of the evils inſeparable from war, were alone ſufficient to raiſe the higheſt idea of the tenderneſs and humane care which directed and ſupported it. No riot or diſorder; no negligence or abuſe among the attendants; no miſapplication or embezzlement of the proviſions made for the patients: all was order and harmony between them. How unlike to other ſcenes of the ſame nature which I had ſeen before!

If he was delighted with the ſpirited attachment of his ſoldiers in health, his delight was almoſt raiſed to extaſy, by the behaviour of theſe victims of the madneſs of the great. The thought of

having ſuffered in his cauſe the extremeſt anguiſh of pain, not even the agonies of death ever making them utter a ſyllable to his diſadvantage, or forget him in their prayers, in which his preſervation was always joined with their own relief, and his happineſs recommended with their ſouls to Heaven.

This was too moving to be long bor'n; he joined in the general prayer, and haſted from the tender ſcene, as ſoon as he had fulfilled the motive of his going, by taking a ſtrict view of every thing in which his orders might be diſobeyed, and theſe his particular family, as he called them, ſuffer by neglect.

His tour was now finiſhed, and he returned to his tent, to take his neceſſary reſt, having diſtributed, on the various occaſions that had occurred in his walk, all the money he had taken with him except *me*, who happened to ſtick in the corner of his pocket.

Temperance, exerciſe, and ſerenity of conſcience inſured his repoſe; he fell aſleep the moment his head touched the pillow, nor awoke till his uſual early time of riſing next morning, when he returned to the fatigue and perplexity of ſuch a multiplicity of affairs with a clear head and undiſmayed heart, and ſoon reduced the confuſion of them into ſuch order, as made their execution eaſy.

As the ſoldier had judged, the hour of battle was at hand. The King had ſcarce finiſhed the buſineſs of the morning, when an officer brought him an account, that the forces of the enemy were in motion. 'I expected it (ſaid the King 'coolly;) I knew they could not remain long in 'the ſituation they were in. But let us obſerve 'their

'their motions, that we may regulate our's by 'them.'

Then, ordering ſome of his generals to follow him, he went to the top of a neighbouring houſe, from whence he could view them diſtinctly, where, having obſerved them attentively for ſome conſiderable time, 'It is done, my friends!' (ſaid he, with a ſmile of joy that enlightened all his face;) 'it is done! That laſt motion is 'what we wanted. Let us haſte, and embrace 'the opportunity which Heaven has put into our 'hands.'—Then, deſcending with an alacrity that inſpired every beholder, he made his diſpoſitions for the battle, and, putting himſelf at the head of his forces, marched directly againſt the enemy.

Deſcriptions of battles are never ſatisfactory; the confuſion is too great, and the buſineſs of the ſcene too complex to be brought into the regularity of any one deſign. I ſhall, therefore, only ſay, that my maſter was completely victorious: and, to raiſe his own glory the higher, the victory was entirely gained by that part of his forces which he commanded in perſon; the excellent diſpoſition he had made of the reſt rendering it unneceſſary for them to do more than ſtand ſpectators of the action from the ſituation in which he placed them, while they prevented him from being ſurrounded by the enemy.

This victory was not gained without reſiſtance. The field was long and obſtinately diſputed, and my maſter often obliged to lead his men to the charge: but numbers were at length forced to ſubmit to ſuperiour valour; and the evening ſun ſaw his banners wave in triumph, where thoſe of

his enemies had menaced his deſtruction in the morning.—If the intrepidity with which he flew from rank to rank, and expoſed himſelf to every ſhape of death in the action, had ſtruck me with aſtoniſhment, I was not leſs affected by his conduct after it was over, when, cooling inſtantly from that enthuſiaſm of courage, he gave his orders for ſecuring the glorious advantage he had gained, for taking immediate care of the unhappy ſufferers, both friends and enemies without diſtinction, and for refreſhing his own laboured ſoldiers, with all the ſerenity of peace.

CHAP. IV.

The happy fruits of victory. CHRYSAL *finds new reaſon to admire his maſter. A ſtranger throws himſelf at his feet to implore juſtice. The ſtory of the ſtranger.*

THE tranſactions ſucceeding this event were but the common occurrences on ſuch occaſions, in which there is always ſomething ſo cruel in the triumphs of the victors, and ſo ſevere in the ſufferings of the vanquiſhed, that, to a being free from the contradictory frenſies of mankind, the very thought is painful.——His majeſty's next care, after returning publick thanks to Heaven on the very ſpot where its favour had been ſo ſignal, was to reward the behaviour of his ſoldiers. He praiſed, he promoted, he gave money to them, according to their different ranks and diſpoſitions. Nor was his juſtice more bounteous in the reward of

of merit, than ſevere in the puniſhment of the want of it.

Under ſuch a leader, what forces could withſtand his ſoldiers? Under the diſcerning eye of ſuch a prince, who was not actuated with ambition to diſtinguiſh himſelf in the execution of his duty, to obtain his favour; who dared to be guilty of diſobedience or neglect, to incur his wrath?

From the field of battle the victorious army was directly marched away to a ſiege, their ſucceſs in which was to open them an opportunity of attacking another army of the enemy with advantage.

Such a round of carnage was ſo ſhocking, that the virtues of my maſter were not a balance to the horrours of his ſervice, and I began to wiſh for a releaſe from ſuch a ſcene of *glory*, when an unexpected occaſion ſhowed me his character in a light that raiſed my admiration of him ſtill higher.

As he was riding along the lines of his camp, the morning after the battle, reviewing a body of forces which he was detaching on a particular expedition, a man, in the habit of a private ſoldier, threw himſelf proſtrate acroſs his way, crying, '*Mercy! O great King! Have mercy on the ſufferings of a wretch in deſpair, and ſhow yourſelf the ſubſtitute of Heaven, by impartial juſtice.*'—The guards and attendants on the King would have ſpurned the ſuppliant out of the way, but his Majeſty, ſtruck with the ſtrangeneſs of the addreſs, and imagining it muſt proceed from ſome extraordinary cauſe, interpoſed, and bidding him ariſe, 'What is the grievance you complain of?' (ſaid he, with a placid look and encouraging accent)

cent) 'or againſt whom do you ſo ſolemnly im-
'plore juſtice?'

'O great and good King!' (replied the ſtranger, with an air that beſpoke ſomething above his preſent appearance) 'my griefs are too many to 'be told ſo conciſely as your preſent ſituation 'demands; and the juſtice I implore will require 'time to diveſt nature of its ſtrongeſt paſſions.'— 'What can this mean! (ſaid the monarch in ſur-'priſe.) Meet me directly at my tent, and expect 'that juſtice which the ſimplicity of truth ſhall be 'entitled to, without theſe laboured exclamations.'

——The buſineſs which his mind was intent upon prevented the King's thinking any more of this affair, till he ſaw the man at his return to his tent; when calling to him, 'Now (ſaid he) 'ſpeak your griefs with the boldneſs, but alſo with 'the guard of truth, and doubt not the redreſs of 'juſtice.'—Encouraged by theſe words, the ſtranger, bowing his head, and pauſing a moment, as if to ſupport his grief, began thus: 'So may the 'ear of Heaven be ever open to thy petitions, O 'gracious King, as thou haſt readily vouchſafed 'to hear my cries! So may its juſtice redreſs thy 'wrongs, as thou ſhalt deal with mine! Thou 'ſeeſt before thee the moſt wretched of mankind, 'whom deſpair has reduced to the neceſſity of 'flying from the defenſe of his country, and im-'ploring juſtice for his private wrongs, from the 'declared foe of my ſovereign. But let me not 'waſte your time with fruitleſs complaints. My 'name, though ſpoken with ſome reſpect in my 'native country, is too obſcure to have reached 'your ears, as my anceſtors wiſely confined their 'virtues to private life, nor ever laboured to em-

'blazon

'blazon their names with titles, that too often 'marr the happineſs of their owners.

'In their ſteps I trod, till the wrath of Heaven 'kindled the ambition of princes, and my coun- 'try became the theatre of their contention. I 'then thought it my duty to ariſe in its defenſe, 'and the juſtice of my motive drew ſucceſs on 'my attempts. But, while I vainly indulged 'the hope of being inſtrumental in delivering my 'country from the horrours of war, a foe broke 'into my houſe, thus deſtitute of its defender, 'and rifled all the treaſure of my ſoul! O my 'unhappy wife! my newly wedded, beauteous 'wife! In vain didſt thou call upon me in the hour 'of thy diſtreſs! when the hand of the raviſher 'was twiſted in thine hair, and the horrours of 'immediate ruin took poſſeſſion of thy ſoul! 'Thy protector was away, buſied in the defenſe 'of others, while the wolf was ravaging his de- 'ſerted fold.

'But whither does my diſtraction hurry me? 'O pardon, gracious monarch, the inconſiſtencies 'of deſpair! I will be brief; I will not treſpaſs 'on thy precious time.'——He pauſed then a mo- ment, till a flood of tears eaſed the fulneſs of his heart, and then proceeded thus:

'In the irruption of thy troops into *Bohemia*, 'about ſix months ago, my unhappy fortune led 'a party of them to my houſe, where the induſ- 'try of my anceſtors, for ages of peace, fell a 'ſacrifice to the wantonneſs of unreſtrained de- 'vaſtation in one moment. But I complain not 'of this. It was my ſhare of the indiſcriminate 'calamity. Alas! my woes are of another na- 'ture.

'The beauty of my wife ſtruck the very hard-
'ened hearts of the ſoldiers with ſuch reverence,
'that, in the fury of their outrage, they dared
'not to lay a ſacrilegious hand on her: but this
'ſafeguard that protected her from rapine, only
'raiſed the more audacious rage of luſt againſt her.
'The officer who commanded the party no ſooner
'ſaw her, than, inflamed with brutal deſire, he
'hurried her away with him to the camp, where
'imagination ſinks in horrour from the thought
'of what ſhe may have ſuffered.

'The news of my misfortune ſoon reached
'me. No reſtraints of military duty were of
'force to hold me a moment; I flew to the ſcene
'of my ruin, where, having learned what I
'have related to you, the greatneſs of my grief
'ſtupified me for a time, till the thought of my
'wife's being ſtill alive, and in the poſſeſſion of
'her raviſher, rouſed me to a reſolution of la-
'bouring for her relief. I, therefore, immedi-
'ately entered in diſguiſe into thoſe very troops
'which had perpetrated my ruin, as I deſpaired
'of eluding the vigilance of thy officers by any
'other means. My ſtratagem had ſucceſs; I
'ſoon learned that the officer, who had brought
'my wife from my houſe, had been obliged to
'give her up to his general, who had demanded
'her as ſoon as ſhe had been brought to the
'camp.

'A dawn of hope broke in upon me; though
'I could not gain any account of her after this:
'I thought that a man honoured with your par-
'ticular eſteem muſt be poſſeſſed of virtue; and
'this, I knew, muſt be her protection.

'Big

'Big with this hope, I found means to rejoin 'my own corps, where my abſence was eaſily 'excuſed to a general who was my friend, and 'who readily yielded to my requeſt of ſending 'a trumpet, with a letter, to enquire for ſuch a 'lady, and to deſire that ſhe might be treated 'with the tenderneſs and reſpect due to her ſex 'and beauty, till ſhe ſhould be reſtored to her 'friends.

'But all my fond hopes fell to the ground, 'when an anſwer was returned, that the general 'knew not of ſuch a perſon. Deſpair now 'ſtared me in the face; I ſaw all the horrours of 'my condition; and would that inſtant have 'returned in my diſguiſe and ſtabbed the raviſher 'at the head of his forces, had I not reflected 'that my *Theodora* might be only expoſed by 'ſuch an action to new inſults, and her life, 'perhaps, ſacrificed in torture and ignominy to 'revenge.

'While I fluctuated in this diſtreſs, Heaven 'inſpired me with the thought of having recourſe 'to your juſtice. Though he is the enemy of 'my ſovereign, ſaid I, he is *a man* who feels the 'tender impulſe of humanity; he is *a king* who 'delights in juſtice! I therefore reaſſumed my 'diſguiſe, and entered into your camp as a de-'ſerter, the night before this battle, in which 'inſtinctive abhorrence of cowardice urged me 'to the duty of a ſoldier, and I happened to fight 'near your perſon; where, though I was ſen-'ſible of my crime, in aſſiſting the enemy of my 'ſovereign, I had this palliative conſolation, that 'the forces I engaged were not my fellow-ſub-'jects, but thoſe of a perfidious ally, who en-'tered into the war only to take his own ad-

'vantage, when a proper opportunity ſhould 'offer.

'This, O gracious King! is my unhappy 'ſtory. This is the grievance for which I im- 'plore thy juſtice; for which I fought againſt 'the allies of my ſovereign yeſterday; for which 'I threw myſelf before your horſe's feet this 'morning; for which I now call upon you by 'that Power who has placed you as his ſubſti- 'tute on earth, and will require an account 'of thy ſtewardſhip. O juſtice! juſtice! ju- 'ſtice!'

CHAP. V.

The King ſends for the General, and orders the ſtranger to be confined till his arrival. Continuation of the ſtory of the ſtranger. A new tryal of the King's fortitude and activity of ſoul.

THE King heard out the ſtranger's ſtory without interruption; and then, addreſſing himſelf to his officers and attendants round him, 'How unhappy (ſaid he) is the condition of 'princes, who muſt be anſwerable for the crimes 'of their ſervants, as if every man's own were 'not more than he can bear!

'I thought this man as upright as I knew him 'brave: I thought juſtice and mercy attemper- 'ed valour in his breaſt. But perhaps he is 'wronged; let us not judge too haſtily. Go '(turning to one of his officers) bid him come

'to me directly, nor tell him a word of the occaſion. If he is guilty, he has forfeited my eſteem for ever; but, if this complaint is only a calumny deviſed to exaſperate me againſt one of my beſt friends, ſeverely ſhall the author of it feel that juſtice which he ſo ſolemnly implores. Let him, therefore, be taken into cuſtody till the event decides the doubt; but let him be treated with that humanity which his apparent diſtreſs ſtands in need of; nor let any hardſhip or indignity give juſtice the appearance of prejudice, or ſeem to intimidate his reſolution.'

He then retired to enjoy thoſe few moments of his life, which privacy enabled him to call his own.

His Majeſty's commands were ſo punctually obeyed, that the General arrived at the camp the very next day, where he immediately waited on his maſter, who received him with his uſual familiarity; and having conferred with him for ſome time, on the ſituation of the affairs under his care, he led him to the door of his tent, where he had ordered the ſtranger to be brought to confront him, and then ſpoke thus, as if in continuation of his former diſcourſe: 'It has ever been my ſtrongeſt wiſh, my moſt poſitive command, that the calamities of this neceſſary war ſhould fall as light as poſſible on the innocent ſubjects of thoſe powers who have provoked it; particularly, I have always enjoined the ſtricteſt care to avoid every unneceſſary devaſtation of private property, every appearance of cruelty or ill treatment to the defenſeleſs weakneſs of the aged, of women, and children. What, then, muſt be my grief to find theſe orders diſobeyed! to find that the ruins of the poor mark

'the

'the marches of my armies, and the cries of 'private anguiſh ariſe to Heaven againſt me! 'But theſe enormities ſhall not lie on my head 'for neglect of puniſhing them, nor be perſiſted 'in on the hope of impunity. Were my right hand 'guilty of ſuch crimes, I would cut it off with my 'left, rather than it ſhould infect my mind.'

The ſolemnity with which the King ſpoke theſe words ſtruck all preſent with terror for *the accuſed*, who alone was ignorant of their deſign. The King ſaw the general concern, and, to let the impreſſion ſink the deeper, he pauſed ſome moments before he proceeded; then, turning ſhort upon the General with a determined look and aweful voice, 'Tell me (ſaid he) where is the woman whom 'thou hadſt from the officer who brought her to 'the camp, when the forces under thy command 'entered into *Bohemia?* the woman whom the '*Bohemian* general ſent to enquire after in vain; 'and whom, I fear, thou didſt deny, and ſtill 'detaineſt for purpoſes too baſe to mention?'

The unexpectedneſs of this charge deprived the unhappy criminal of all preſence of mind: he ſtood abaſhed, and the confuſion of his looks too plainly betrayed his guilt. The King ſaw his diſtreſs with the greateſt concern; but, ſuperiour to every private regard that could interfere with his ſublimer character, 'Tell me where ſhe is this 'inſtant! (ſaid he) nor aggravate, by falſehood, 'crimes already too flagrant; for I will know the 'whole of this black affair.'

'O, Sir! (replied the General, throwing himſelf at his feet) I acknowledge my crime; but I 'cannot bear thy wrath. Let me die this mo'ment; let that puniſhment expiate my guilt; 'but afflict me no longer with thy diſpleaſure,

'which is heavier than I can bear.'—'*Where is the woman? Speak.*'—'Safe and inviolate in my tent. My entreaties have not been able to prevail on her virtue; and my paſſion was too delicate to ſeek gratification by force.'—'*This moment let her be ſent for! and let the cauſe of her coming be concealed from her: I will learn the truth of this ſtrange affair from herſelf. In the mean time, let her huſband be treated with tenderneſs and reſpect. His misfortunes deſerve compaſſion.*'

The King had ſcarce ſaid this, when an expreſs arrived from another of his armies, which guarded his own dominions from the calamities of war, to inform him, that they had been repulſed with great loſs, in an attack upon the army of the enemy, which was now in full march to his capital. ——'*Thy will be done, O God!* (ſaid the King.) '*Thy will be done.*'——And then, without any appearance of ſurpriſe or alteration in his looks, he inſtantly gave orders for a ſtrong detachment of the army under his own command to march to the re-enforcement of that which had ſuffered this loſs; and retired to conſider of the alterations which this event muſt neceſſarily occaſion in the operations of the campaign, and write his ſeveral orders accordingly, for he was his own ſecretary.

But, though his looks were thus eaſy, his heart ſeverely felt this misfortune. 'O God! (ſaid he, 'as ſoon as he was alone) when will thy wrath be appeaſed? When ſhall this people have reſt? If 'I am the unhappy object of it, O let it fall on 'my head alone, but ſpare them! There is no-'thing certain in this life; nothing worth a wiſe 'man's care or regard. The victory with which it 'pleaſed thee to bleſs our arms ſo lately, raiſed my 'hopes to a proſpect of peace. But the ſcene is

'now

'now changed; and this advantage will raiſe the 'pride and malice of our enemies ſtill higher, and 'make new deluges of blood neceſſary to bring 'them to a ſenſe of reaſon and juſtice. Thy will 'be done, O Lord! But, as it is not yet declared, it is our duty to make uſe of the means which 'thou haſt put into our power to accompliſh that 'end which appears to us moſt juſt and advantageous. The horrours of the war are ready to burſt 'upon my country, after all my endeavours to ſave 'it, and divert them elſewhere. But they ſhall 'not unoppoſed; I myſelf will ſtand in the 'breach, and defend my native country.'

The ſerenity in the looks of the King had deceived the fears of the army, and every one prepared to obey him with the greateſt alacrity: and, though this affair put the whole camp in motion, it occaſioned neither diſorder nor confuſion. Active as light, the King *was* every-where, *ordered* every thing, *ſaw* every thing prepared, as well for the convenience of his ſoldiers as for the greateſt poſſible expedition of their march. His armies might be vanquiſhed, for they were but men; but to deject or diſorder *his* mind was not in the power of any event.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

Concluſion of the ſtory of the ſtranger. His wife arrives and acquits the general. The king's ſpeech to him, and generoſity to the ſtrangers. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice, and goes with them. Some general remarks on the character of the king of* BULGARIA, *and the probable conſequences of the war.*

BY this time the *Bohemian* lady arrived, whom the king ordered to be brought directly to his tent. The firſt ſight of this woman raiſed emotions in his heart which it had long been a ſtranger to. A beauty that exceeded imagination, and a ſweetneſs and expreſſion in her looks beyond deſcription, ſoon made him ſenſible that all his heroiſm could not eradicate the paſſions of nature, and raiſed his pity both for the unfortunate general and for her huſband.

He ſtood ſome moments gazing at her in ſilent aſtoniſhment; but recollecting himſelf ſoon, he addreſſed her thus with the higheſt complacency and reſpect in his look and accent: 'I have ſent 'for you, madam, to this improper place for the 'delicacy of your ſex, to learn from yourſelf the 'manner of your having been brought away 'from *Bohemia*, and the cauſe of your being 'ſince detained by the general of my army. 'Speak, madam, have you ſuffered any violence, 'any uſage improper for your ſex and merit?

'Speak

'Speak with the aſſurance of truth, and expect 'juſtice and redreſs.'

'O mighty king, (ſaid the lady, proſtrating 'herſelf at his feet) oft have I heard of thy won-'derous virtues; but never till this moment could 'I think that you could ſtoop ſo low as to take 'notice of my wretchedneſs. My ſad ſtory is 'no more than this—I was torn from my houſe 'by an officer of your army; I was hurried away 'to the camp by him, and there inſulted by the 'baſe offers of his love; but Heaven delivered 'me from him. Your general heard of my di-'ſtreſs, and reſcued me from his power: ſince 'which time I have had no perſonal cauſe of 'complaint, beſide the indiſcriminate calamity of 'the wars, which have robbed me of my huſ-'band, and left me a friendleſs widow in the 'hands of my enemies.'—A flood of tears here ſtopped her utterance.

The king, raiſing her from the ground, proceed-ed thus: 'A widow, madam, did you ſay? How 'long ſince have you loſt your huſband, and by 'what means did you hear of his death?'

'O ſire! (replied ſhe) as ſoon as I was freed 'from the horrours of brutal violence by the ge-'neral, I wrote to my huſband, with his permiſ-'ſion, but received no anſwer to many, very ma-'ny letters. This ſuſpence was worſe than death, 'and almoſt drove me to deſpair; till the general 'at length, in compaſſion to my miſery, wrote 'himſelf to the commander of the army in which 'my huſband had ſerved, who returned him for 'anſwer that he had been killed about the time I 'was taken priſoner. O! happy had been my 'lot had I ſhared his fate!'

'I hope

'I hope, madam (ſaid the king) you have 'received no injuries, that make you weary of 'life: I hope my general has not miſbehaved him-'ſelf to you.'

'O, ſire! (replied ſhe) I have received no 'injuries beſides the irreparable loſs of my huſ-'band, after which I can have no deſire to live. 'As for the general, he has always treated me 'with the greateſt compaſſion and tenderneſs. 'But now, will your majeſty hear the voice of af-'fliction? will you grant the only wiſh of an heart 'in deſpair? let me be conveyed to ſome religious 'houſe, where I may devote the ſad remnant of 'my days to the ſervice of Heaven, far from the 'knowledge of the general and every other perſon 'who has ever heard of my name. I am ſenſible 'of the preſumption of troubling you with this 'requeſt; but to whom ſhould we fly in the mo-'ment of diſtreſs except to Heaven, or its vicege-'rents, eſpecially thoſe whoſe virtues give its ſeal 'to their authority.'

'You may depend (returned the king) upon 'every endeavour of my power to make you 'happy. But, madam, what meant the particu-'lar mention of the general, in your deſire of 'being retired from the knowledge of the world? 'Pray, be ingenuous; I hope he has not tranſ-'greſſed the limits of his own virtue and my 'command.'

'O, ſire! (replied ſhe) miſtake not the in-'coherencies of diſtraction: the general has al-'ways treated me with reſpect and tenderneſs: 'tenderneſs in exceſs, for nothing can be hid 'from you, was the only thing my ſoul could 'diſapprove of his behaviour. He offered me 'honourable love; but, alas, my huſband! my

'dead

'dead huſband has poſſeſſion of this heart! there 'he is buried! nor ever ſhall another love diſturb 'his dear rememberance.'

'Madam, be comforted (returned the king;) 'ſuch virtue as your's is the peculiar care of Hea- 'ven; you may be happy yet; your huſband may 'be ſtill alive: in the diſorders of theſe unhappy 'times many ſtrange things happen: many who 'are thought to be alive are long ſince dead; many 'who have been long thought dead are found to 'be alive.'—'*O ſire! what can your words im-* '*port? you would not jeſt with miſery! you cannot* '*ſpeak in vain! O, am I yet to hope after ſo long* '*deſpair?*—'Hope! always hope! but I ſhall 'ſend a proper perſon to explain my words.'

Saying this, the king went to the door of his tent, and, ſeeing her huſband burſting with anxiety and impatience, he called, 'Go (ſaid he) in 'there, and ſee what bleſſings Heaven reſerves for 'virtue; go in alone; ſuch meltings of the ſoul 'as muſt attend your meeting are too delicate to 'be expoſed to other eyes.'

Then turning to the General, 'You have be- 'haved nobly, my friend (ſaid he) in ſuch 'temptation, which was almoſt too great for hu- 'man virtue! had you injured ſuch excellence, 'dear as you are to my heart, your life ſhould have 'expiated the crime. But you have behaved 'nobly; in ſuch a tryal it is virtue to refrain from 'vice; the errors you have fallen into are but the 'weakneſſes of nature; for to have been inſen- 'ſible to her beauty and perfections would have 'argued a deficiency in humanity.—But, beware, 'my friend, of indulging thoſe paſſions; they ener- 'vate the heart, and wean the ſoul inſenſibly from 'virtue; the example is before thine eyes; ſee

'how

'how the violence of love has been able to urge 'the noble heart of this woman's husband to de- 'sert his charge, to enter into the service of his 'enemies, to fight against the dictates of his own 'conscience: think of this, and be more cautious 'for the future: the heart of a soldier has not 'room for love.'

The general, unable to reply, threw himself at his feet, and embraced his knees. 'I understand 'you (said the king, smiling) your passion is 'not quite cured; but you shall have employment 'to wear off this rust of idleness: return to your 'command this moment, and expect my further 'orders.'

The general obeyed, and the king addressing those around him, 'To be without fault (said he) 'were not to be a man; he is the best who has 'the smallest; and allowance is to be made for 'human frailty, where the temptation is too great 'for human virtue.'

As the king said this, the stranger and his wife came out together, and, throwing themselves at his feet, bedewed them with tears of grateful extasy: 'Arise (said the monarch) and be happy 'in each other. I have restored you to your wife, '(said he to the husband) and am ready to do you 'every further instance of justice which you can 'demand.'

'My soul is satisfied, O gracious king; my 'soul is satisfied (replied he:) I ask no more of 'Heaven, but to reward your goodness, your ju- 'stice, and compassion.'

'But there is one thing more to be considered '(said the king;) your estate was wasted; your 'house burned by my soldiers; I do not know 'the loss you may have suffered: take this (giv-

ing

'ing him a large purſe of gold) if that is not ſuffi-
'cient to repair it, when Heaven, in mercy to
'mankind ſhall bid the calamites of war to ceaſe,
'if my life is ſpared, come to me and I will re-
'move every cauſe of your complaint. I do not
'aſk you to enter into my ſervice in this war, but
'if your honour, your conſcience, oppoſe it not,
'you may expect every encouragement due to
'your merit.'

'O ſire! it is too much! your goodneſs over-
'whelms me! I will retire from the ſeat of war!
'I will implore Heaven for your happineſs and
'ſafety; and though I cannot, may not, fight for
'you, my arm ſhall never more be raiſed againſt
'you.'

His wife and he then withdrew to prepare for their departure, leaving the king no leſs happy in being the authour of their happineſs, than his goodneſs and bounty had made them.——I here quitted the ſervice of this great prince, being in the purſe which he gave to the ſtranger. The happineſs which this pair experienced, in being thus unexpectedly reſtored to each other, is not to be expreſſed; the delicacy of their love being as much too ſublime for deſcription, as the ſenſuality of other ſcenes is beneath it. In a word, they wanted, they wiſhed for nothing more, and, to ſecure the poſſeſſion of what they enjoyed, they reſolved to go and live privately with his brother, an eccleſiaſtick in *Vienna*, till the war ſhould be at an end, and they might with ſafety return into their own country. This reſolution was ſoon taken; they applied for paſſports that evening, and left the camp the next morning.

Sick

Sick as I was of ſuch a ſcene of blood, I own I could not leave this prince without reluctance. I ſee you are deſirous that I ſhould give you a character of him; but I muſt not gratify your curioſity; what I have told you of his actions may convince you, that he is the greateſt of men: but humanity is too frail to be able to form any definitive judgement from his paſt, for his future life. Succeſs may elevate; misfortune may ſour his mind; and ſo overthrow that equality of it, which now raiſes him almoſt above man. His enemies are numerous and inveterate; his friends few, and hardly ſteady enough to be relied on: ſo that his dependence is ſolely on the attachment of his own ſubjects, and the ſtrength of his own ſoul.

What will be the event of his fortune is not permitted me to conjecture: this only I muſt ſay, that, if he falls, it had been better for his country, for *Europe* in general, that he had never been born; as his ſtruggles will exhauſt their ſtrength, and leave them an eaſy prey to a foe *(the Turks)* whoſe ſilence makes them not apprehenſive of him, but who laughs in his heart to ſee them thus do his work, and deſtroy againſt each other the forces which might prevent his adding them to the number of the nations which already groan under his yoke. A deſign which he certainly meditates, and will not loſe a moment to put into execution, when the opportunity he watches for is ripe.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

CHRYSAL *arrives at* VIENNA, *where he meets an old acquaintance. The hiſtory of his maſter's brother. His miſſion, labours, and ſucceſs in* ENGLAND. *He is ſent to* PERU. *He diſapproves of the precipitancy of the meaſures carried on there, and returns to* EUROPE *to prepare matters better.*

IF the immediate ſcene of the war was ſhocking, the appearance of the countries around it was rather worſe. In the former, the hurry of action kept the mind too buſy to attend to every minute diſtreſs: but here a diſmal deſolation opened a field for melancholy reflexion, which every object added horrours to. The lands laid waſte; the villages in aſhes; the inhabitants periſhing in the fields and high roads; of wounds, ſickneſs, famine, and every various kind of miſery, which the madneſs of human nature can inflict upon itſelf.

Through ſuch monuments of military glory did we travel to *Vienna*, where my maſter and his wife were received with open arms by his brother, who inſiſted on their living in his houſe. The ſcene was here changed from the tumults and wants of war, to all the luxury and eaſe of peace.

The moment I ſaw this eccleſiaſtick, I knew him to have been a member of the convent, to the head of which I belonged in *Peru*. This unexpected meeting, at ſuch a diſtance, raiſed

a

a curiosity to know the cause of his removal from a place where I thought I had left him settled in all the happiness which riches and sensual pleasures could afford.

It was not long before this curiosity was gratified; for, the very evening after my master's arrival, he led him to a walk in his garden, and, sitting down under a tree on the brink of a fountain, addressed him thus:

'It is many years, my dearest brother, since 'I had the happiness of seeing you last. Various 'have been the climates I have gone through! va- 'rious the vicissitudes of my fortune since that 'day! from despair to exultation! from royal 'affluence and power to apprehension of perishing 'by famine, or in a prison. Wonder not at my 'words; I will explain them to you in a short 'view of my life, which it is necessary I should 'give you, to prepare you for the participation of 'secrets, in which your assistance may be employed 'in establishing the most extensive and firm power 'which ever yet was raised upon this globe.—You 'may remember, though you were then very 'young, that the representations of the *Jesuit*, to 'whose care our education was committed, made 'such an impression on me, that, in despite of my 'father's threats and entreaties, I renounced my 'patrimony in your favour, and, taking only a 'small sum of money to defray the expenses of 'my journey, went directly to *Rome* with my 'tutor, where I readily obtained admission into 'the *Society of Jesus*, as soon as I had gone through 'the usual preparatory forms of education.

'Nothing remarkable happened to me during 'the first years of my being professed, my studies

'engroſſing my whole time and attention; in 'which I made ſuch a proficiency, that the ge- 'neral of the order thought it proper to ſend me 'into the world, in the ſervice of the ſociety.

'The firſt ſtage of my miſſion was to *England*, 'whither I went, to counteract the poiſon which 'was diſpenſing againſt us, by an apoſtate of our 'order, who, under the pretenſe of employing his 'abilities in the ſervice of the ſociety, had been 'admitted to all the libraries, and ſuffered to take 'extracts from all the records of the church. But 'no ſooner had he made ſuch a collection as he 'thought ſufficient for his purpoſe, than he fled to '*England*, his native country, where, renouncing 'his vows and religion, he turned the weapons 'which had been entruſted in his hands for the 'defenſe of the church againſt her, employing 'the abſtracts he had made to the defamation of 'the character, and ſubverſion of the power, of 'the *Holy See*.

'My ſucceſs in this my firſt negociation (for, 'in defiance of truth, reaſon, conſcience, and 'common ſenſe, by plauſible inſinuations, by 'forged certificates, or, which was the ſame 'thing, by certificates from people who would 'certify any thing in their own favour, againſt a 'man who attacked the very fundamentals of 'their power; by bribery, ſubornation, perjury, 'and every kind of artifice, I, in a great meaſure, 'defeated his deſign, and overturned the authority 'of his work;) my ſucceſs, I ſay, in this difficult 'undertaking, for he had gone out from among 'ourſelves, and was verſed in our whole ſcience, 'encouraged the order to continue me in that 'miſſion, but in an higher office.

'The

'The laws, religion, and government of the 'nation were now the objects assigned to my at-'tacks, in which I laboured with various success 'for some years, in every character which hu-'man volubility could assume. I was a quaker; 'a methodist; a deist; I wrote for the ministry, 'or against the government, as the prevailing hu-'mour of the day promised attention to my wri-'tings. The sea which flows around that island 'being not more unsteady than the minds of the 'inhabitants, nor more liable to be ruffled by the 'winds of heaven, than they are by every breath 'of popular rumour.

'I proceeded thus for some time, with various 'success, till, happening to disclose some secret 'transactions, which were known there only to 'the persons concerned, and had been communi-'cated to me from abroad, in order to sow dissen-'sion between the people and their governours, 'to the ruin of both, the conscious parties were 'alarmed, and my intelligence traced so secretly, 'that I had difficulty to escape by flight from an 'ignominious death, which the resentment of 'those, whose ruinous machinations I had thus 'discovered to their country, would certainly 'have brought me to.

'My failing in this attempt, in which thou-'sands had failed before me, was no prejudice to 'my character, nor in the least lessened me in the 'opinion of the order. On the contrary, the ef-'forts I had made were so daring, so deeply laid, 'and so well conducted, that I was now judged a 'proper person to be employed in greater matters.

'I was therefore sent, the next year, to what 'is called the *Spanish* world, but is really the *Je-*

'*ſuits* heaven in *America*, where matters of the 'higheſt moment were juſt ripe for execution.— 'When I came there, I found things in a forward-'neſs too great for their foundation; the eagerneſs 'of ſome of our people hurrying on events before 'proper preparation had enſured their ſucceſs. 'In ſhort, they were ready to revolt from *Spain* and '*Portugal*, before they had made proviſion to ſup-'port themſelves in ſuch an attempt. They 'wanted European officers, ſoldiers, arms, and 'ammunition, for on the natives there is no de-'pendence; but, above all, the time was un-'favourable. The powers they meant to attack 'in this vital part were at peace with all the 'world, and conſequently at liberty to turn their 'whole force againſt them.

'I, therefore, counſelled them to moderate their 'zeal, and wait till better preparations, and a 'more favourable minute, ſhould make their ſuc-'ceſs more probable. But they would not hearken 'to my advice, but attributed it to envy, or want 'of reſolution: on which I left them to their 'own ill fortune, and haſted home to provide a 'remedy for evils which I could not prevent.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

Continuation of the Jeſuit's diſcourſe. He ſhows the promiſing ſituation of his affairs at preſent. The conciſe method by which SPAIN *and* PORTUGAL *are to be brought into the war with* ENGLAND. *He propoſes to his brother to join in the general, that he may accompliſh his particular deſign.*

'THE event has confirmed my opinion; by 'ſtriking too ſoon, the blow has been ineffectual. However, things, though diſconcerted 'by this precipitancy, are not quite ruined; and 'care may yet repair the effects of their folly.

'In this cauſe I now labour, in concert with 'others of my brethren in every court of *Europe*; 'and I have the ſatisfaction to think that we have 'a proſpect of ſucceſs. The only obſtacle that 'retards us at preſent is, the difficulty of making 'the courts of *Spain* and *Portugal* enter into the 'war againſt *England*. Could we bring this to 'bear, our work would be eaſy. The mighty naval power of *England* will not only prevent their 'ſending over forces to oppreſs us before we can 'eſtabliſh our power, but will alſo aſſiſt us to 'carry on the war, to ſhare in the ſpoil, and diſtreſs our enemies.

'But, while the preſent kings are on the 'thrones of thoſe kingdoms, it will be ſcarcely 'poſſible to bring our deſigns to perfection, they 'are ſo utterly averſe to hazarding the conſequences of a war with a nation from whoſe alliance they receive ſuch advantages.——The

'firſt thing, therefore, which we do, muſt be to 'remove them. The former has already ſwallowed 'his death, though the proceſs will be ſo ſlow as 'to eſcape ſuſpicion. With the other ſuch caution 'is not neceſſary, nor is there time for it: the 'arm is already lifted up againſt him, for a ſtroke 'that will terrify the world.

'When theſe obſtacles are removed, the exe-'cution of our deſigns will meet with no further 'delay. The ſucceſſors to theſe princes we have 'ſecured ſuch an influence on, that we can work 'them to whatever we pleaſe, and have already 'poiſoned their minds with prejudices againſt '*England**.

'To provide officers of approved fidelity and 'experience to command our forces, is the next 'object of our care. Shall I candidly own to 'you, that ſuch a length of time and multiplicity 'of affairs had almoſt obliterated all my remem-'berance of my family; but, the moment I heard 'your name mentioned with the reſpect due to 'your merits in the preſent war, a flood of infant 'fondneſs melted my heart, and tears of tendereſt 'joy acknowledged that I had a brother. I im-'mediately gave notice to our general, and by his 'order am empowered to treat thus with you.

'On my engagement for your fidelity (for your 'abilities are known to be far ſuperiour to any that 'ſhall oppoſe you) I am commiſſioned to offer you 'the ſupreme command of all our forces in this 'great undertaking. With what joy I make this 'offer, the pleaſure that you would feel in ſerving 'your brother can beſt enable you to judge.

'Though

* The conduct of the preſent King of *Spain*, hitherto, ſhows that the Jeſuit had formed a wrong opinion of him at leaſt.

'Though I will tell you further, that mine is 'raiſed higher than common feelings can convey 'a notion of. I have hitherto only unfolded the 'general deſign of our order, in which I am but a 'party, though a principal and material one. But 'ſhall I tell you alſo, that my deſigns terminate 'not with their's: as your command will make 'you maſter of all their force; and, as power is 'the conſequence of that, you will be able to con-'fer it where you pleaſe; or, indeed, rather to re-'tain it in your own hands, while I ſhall only eaſe 'you of the trouble of conducting and eſtabliſh-'ing the policy of an infant ſtate.

'This was my motive for writing to you ſo 'preſſingly to come to me to *Vienna*. This is the 'end which I have been labouring for all my life. 'I am advanced in years, and ſhall never marry to 'beget an heir; you are young, and will have 'many. Aſſiſt me, therefore, to acquire a throne 'which muſt deſcend to your poſterity—a throne, 'which, by holding it at firſt as under the ſove-'reignty of the order, will ſoon be eſtabliſhed by 'them, even beyond their own power to ſhake.

'I have now unboſomed myſelf to my brother, 'with all the confidence of ſo near an alliance. 'You will, perhaps, wonder at my openneſs with 'one whom I have not ſeen ſince he was a child. 'But I know your character in life; and, above 'all, I know myſelf ſafe from being betrayed, be-'cauſe the information would not be received.

'Conſider, therefore, whether you will embrace 'this offer; whether you will reign in a ſplendour 'that will dazzle the eyes of the greateſt prince 'in *Europe*, or live here in ſlavery and depend-'ence! The alternative will not admit a mo-'ment's heſitation: I ſee you yield. I will ac-

'quaint our general with it; you and your wife 'ſhall remain here with me, till the proper time 'for all our departure comes, which will depend 'on circumſtances not yet ſettled. In the mean 'time we ſhall have an opportunity of conferring 'on theſe ſubjects together, and preparing all 'things for our undertaking in a manner that 'ſhall enſure ſucceſs.'

Though my maſter made no reply to this propoſal that teſtified the leaſt diſapprobation of it, I could eaſily ſee that many parts of the ſcheme affected him with the ſtrongeſt abhorrence; at the ſame time that the offer of royalty was a temptation which ſhook his reſolution, and almoſt vanquiſhed his virtue.

His brother ſaw the conflict in his heart with pleaſure: had he yielded readily, and without reluctance, he ſhould have withdrawn his confidence from ſuch a depravity of ſoul; and the ſtruggle convinced him that he was his own, as he knew that the man, as well as the woman, who deliberates between virtue and vice is loſt.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

The Jeſuit proceeds to ſhow the riſe of the war in GERMANY, *and explains the motives of the ſeveral parties engaged in it, as alſo of the neutrality obſerved by ſome particular ſtates.*

THE Jeſuit the next evening reſumed the converſation, and, to remove every doubt of ſucceſs that might deter his brother from joining in his deſigns, proceeded thus:

'My brother! (ſaid he) there is nothing ſo 'diſguſting to a rational man as the miſtakes and 'blunders which paſſion, prejudice, pride, and 'ignorance produce in the conduct of all the 'courts in the world, even our's at *Rome* not be-'ing quite exempt from them, though the freeſt 'of all others. As for this of *Vienna*, it is, at 'preſent, a ſcene where every abſurd, every de-'ſtructive paſſion rules.—Among theſe muſt you 'ſeek for the ſources of the preſent war that 'lays all *Germany* waſte: Female pride, picqued 'by ſome ſlighting expreſſions from one eſteemed 'inferiour in rank, and ſtimulated by a deſire of 'recovering by ſurpriſe what had been yielded, 'or rather extorted, by treaty, influenced this ſa-'gacious court, in conjunction with that of *Sax-'ony*, to form deſigns againſt the King of *Bulgaria*. 'But the vigilance of that monarch prevented 'their deſigns, of which he had timely notice; 'and, before their ſchemes were ripe for execu-'tion, he boldly attacked them, and ſo antici-'pated the blow meditated againſt him.

'So daring a ſtep ſurpriſed all *Europe*, and in-
'fluenced many who were unacquainted with the
'motives of it to take part againſt him, while
'more did for private advantage.——Of theſe
'*France* was the firſt; who, concluding a league
'with her ancient enemy, in deſpite of family ani-
'moſity, has entered into a war that ſeems not
'to concern her at all; nor, indeed, does it in the
'obvious conſequences of it. But ſhe has further
'deſigns in view; and, in return for the aſſiſtance
'ſhe gives to cruſh this prince, is to receive from
'the Houſe of *Auſtria* thoſe dominions in the *Ne-*
'*therlands*, which have coſt the greateſt part of
'*Europe* ſuch deluges of blood for above a cen-
'tury to keep out of her hands: while this
'court, inattentive to the conſequences that muſt
'attend *France*'s getting poſſeſſion of theſe long
'conteſted places, has blindly, baſely entered into
'a league with a family that has been labouring
'her ruin for ſo many ages, and betrayed the
'confidence of all the ſtates who have ſupported
'her in them.——The other nations who have
'acceded to this alliance have acted from motives
'merely mercenary in the firſt view, fighting for
'the pay promiſed them by the *Imperial* and *French*
'courts, the latter of whom has ſtretched her ge-
'neroſity ſo far, as to undertake ſupporting her
'new ally with money as well as men.

'But it is not improbable that they may all
'be diſappointed, and the King of *Bulgaria* not
'only eſcape the ruin meditated againſt him, but
'alſo retort it on the machinators; one of the
'principal of whom, the *Saxon*, has already had
'abundant cauſe to repent of his undertaking. As
'for this court, it now fights *pro aris & focis*, as
'may be ſaid; for if that hero is victorious, no-
'thing

'thing leſs is to be expected here, than the total 'loſs of the imperial dignity, of whoſe authority 'there want not many inſtances of the moſt fla-'grant abuſe, to vindicate ſuch a revolution.

'But, of all the effects of this unnatural com-'bination, there is not one more baſe than the in-'gratitude with which this court has behaved to 'that of *England*, whoſe blood and treaſure have 'often ſupported it againſt the very power of '*France*, when every other human aſſiſtance had 'deſerted it; and eſtabliſhed it in its preſent gran-'deur, almoſt at the price of its own ruin.—— 'But now all thoſe benefits are forgot; and be-'cauſe *England* will not tamely look on (if not, 'perhaps, aſſiſt) to ſee the fabrick, which ſhe has 'erected at ſo vaſt an expenſe, overturned to gra-'tify a blind caprice, and a prince, allied to her 'by blood and intereſt, ſacrificed by avarice and 'pride, all her former ſervices are held as can-'celled, and herſelf treated with the rancour of 'the greateſt enemy.

'While *England* thus ſupports her character of 'generoſity, and acts with prudence, the *Dutch*, 'as if infatuated, ſtand quietly to ſee the *barrier*, 'which coſt themſelves even ſo much in erecting 'for their defenſe, thus given away to the very 'power againſt whom it was erected; and who, 'they cannot be inſenſible, means nothing leſs 'than their ruin, as ſoon as it can ſtrike the blow, 'to effect. But, ſuch is the degeneracy of that 'people from every ſentiment of virtue, publick 'and private, that they will not give up the op-'portunity of preſent gain, to ſave their ſtate 'from ſo evident, ſo imminent ruin; vainly, per-'haps, expecting that *England* will ſtill purſue the 'ſchemes of *knight-errantry* which have ſo long

'made her fight the quarrels of her neighbours, 'while they themſelves looked on almoſt as if 'unconcerned in the event; and will be moved 'by the cries of the *diſtreſſed ſtates* to remedy 'the miſtakes, and repair the loſſes of their '*High-Mightineſſes*.

'While every other ſtate in *Europe* is thus 'employed, *Spain* and *Portugal* enjoy all the ad-'vantages of peace, prudently taking no part in a 'war which does not in the leaſt concern them. 'Of theſe, the former, like the old lion in the fa-'ble, is only terrible to ignorant apprehenſion on 'account of what it has been, and is now pacifick 'and harmleſs, becauſe it no longer has the power 'of doing harm. Senſible of this weakneſs, it 'ſleeps in the ſhadow of a mighty name, and mixes 'not in diſputes which muſt only draw it into dif-'ficulties, without any proſpect of advantage to 'engage it in the attempt. But it muſt not be 'let to enjoy this ſtate of tranquillity, ſo contrary 'to our deſigns, any longer; and, as the preſent 'government there is determined to perſiſt in the 'meaſures that ſupport it, it muſt be overturned to 'make way for thoſe who will be more obedient 'to our advice. A method which we muſt alſo 'purſue with *Portugal*; for, though its ſtrength 'is almoſt beneath the rank of an independent, 'much leſs a royal ſtate, yet, upon the account 'of its wealth, which might hire forces to op-'preſs us, it muſt be worked up to take the 'ſame ſtep, and break with *England*, as I have 'ſaid before, to which it has already made large 'advances, by ſeveral moſt unjuſt and injudicious 'encroachments on the trade of that nation.

'As

'As for the war between *France and England*, 'it ariſes ſolely from the contradictions between 'the intereſt of the two nations, which nature 'has ſet in an oppoſition impoſſible to be recon- 'ciled. But the ſeat of this war is ſo remote 'from hence, that it would have no influence on 'the affairs of *Europe*, did not the ſucceſſes of the '*Engliſh* prevent *France* from giving the aſſiſtance 'that was expected, and might be effectual to the 'deſigns of this court, for they have ſo abſolutely 'ruined her trade, that ſhe is no longer able to 'fulfil her engagements with *Ruſſia* particularly, 'and the ſeveral courts of *Germany*, whom ſhe 'undertook to pay, for fighting the quarrel of her 'ally; ſo that the former, who had no other mo- 'tive but the money for entering into the war at 'firſt, will of courſe, and the latter muſt of ne- 'ceſſity, deſert that cauſe, not having any in- 'ternal ſupport of their own, ſince this has failed 'them. Indeed the *Ruſſians*, finding all the 'mighty promiſes which were made them vaniſh 'into air, begin to be ſick of their bargain al- 'ready, and long again for the ſolid advantages of 'their alliance with *England*. As for this court, 'it is now making its laſt effort, and, if this is 'eluded or defeated, it has no other reſource, 'than ſhamefully to receive the law from a prince, 'upon whom it made ſo unjuſt an attempt.'

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

Concluſion of the Jeſuit's diſcourſe. His ſyſtems of morality and religion. His brother yields to his arguments, with ſome particular exceptions. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

'THIS ſhort but diſtinct view of the preſent ſituation of the affairs of *Europe* muſt convince you, that a general peace muſt ſoon be concluded, the parties that would not being able to continue the war much longer; and therefore *we* muſt be ſpeedy in the execution of our deſigns, or the opportunity will be loſt, for it would be impoſſible to make even the pride of *Spain*, or the avarice of *Portugal*, take the meaſures we want at a time when *England* is diſengaged from other enemies. I have drawn this ſketch to ſhow you, that *our* deſigns are not raſhly under taken, but the reſult of the deepeſt knowledge and inſight into things. This muſt remove every ſcruple that may ariſe from doubt of ſucceſs.——But there is one thing more, which muſt be explained, to remove prejudices of another nature, which may perhaps repreſent our undertaking in a wrong light to you; and this is to evince the juſtice of it, and of the means deſigned to accompliſh its ſucceſs.——

'Of this matter you muſt not pretend to judge by the vulgar rules obtruded by deſign upon the ignorance of the world, and which no wiſe man obſerves, who has it in his power to break

'them

'them with impunity.——Man is thrown into 'this world by nature, to obtain his own happi- 'neſs by every means within his power: this is 'too ſublime a truth for vulgar knowledge, as it 'would put an end to the deluſion by which the 'wiſe few keep the herd of mankind in ignorance 'and ſubjection.

'But that it is really the truth, and as ſuch 'made the rule of action by all the ſtates and 'princes in the world, will not be denied, nor 'even doubted by any one who has conſidered the 'ſyſtems of policy and government which are, 'and ever have been, eſtabliſhed by them.

'For if it was not an undoubted maxim, that 'power conſtitutes the rule of juſtice, how incon- 'ſiſtent would be the actions of all mankind? 'How could a ſtate deviſe laws to puniſh the man 'with death, who goes into his neighbour's field, 'and ſteals his ox, and, at the ſame time, ſends 'armies to invade, ſpoil, and depopulate the ter- 'ritories of their neighbours? How could a poor 'pirate be hanged for robbing a ſingle ſhip, and 'fleets immediately after ſent avowedly to deſtroy 'the whole trade of the ſame nation? If a ſtate of 'war is alledged, that is the very impoſition of 'which I ſpoke. Every man has as good a *natu-* 'ral right to declare war with his neighbour, as 'the ſtate he lives in has with another ſtate; and 'every right that is not natural is an uſurpation, 'and void. This is the true philoſophy of life, 'ſtripped of the idle dreams of enthuſiaſm, and 'ſelfiſh miſrepreſentations of deſign.

'As for religion, look over the whole race of 'mankind, and try if you can find one who prac- 'tiſes what he profeſſes: this is an inconteſtible 'proof, that none believe it; as it is alſo, that

'there

'there is no neceſſity they ſhould, elſe would the 'want of faith and obedience be puniſhed by that 'power which is thought to enjoin them; where-'as, on the contrary, it is always moſt ſucceſs-'ful, as it affords means which thoſe reſtraints 'forbid. I obſerved, that in the beginning of 'our converſation on this ſubject, you ſeemed 'ſhocked at my mentioning the neceſſity of re-'moving the perſons who oppoſe our deſigns, and 'particularly when I ſaid the *Spaniard* had ſwal-'lowed his death. But this is all prejudice, and 'want of extending your view beyond the ſurface 'of things.

'For how much better is the method we take, 'of ſtriking the ſingle perſon againſt whom our 'deſign is levelled, than that purſued, not only 'without reproach, but even encouraged by ap-'plauſe, of involving the innocent with the guilty '(innocent I mean in reſpect to us) and laying 'waſte whole nations to bring a prince to death? 'How much better would it have been for this 'court to have removed the king of *Bulgaria* by 'poiſon, or a dagger, than to have deſtroyed mil-'lions, as they have done, in the purſuit of his 'death, by this deſtructive war? This is demon-'ſtration! this is conviction to him who dares 'open his eyes to ſee it! Judge *now* of *our* under-'taking by this invariable ſyſtem, and ſhow me 'one objection to it.'

This long diſſertation was not delivered at one time; it was the ſubſtance of many converſations, by which the Jeſuit ſo wrought upon his brother, that he reſigned himſelf wholly to his diſpoſal, and entered ſincerely into his deſigns. The only objection he made (and that was not urged againſt him) was, to being any way concerned in the compendious

compendious warfare of the ſociety, the prejudice of education being ſtill ſo ſtrong with him, that he could not yet abſtract things ſo nicely, as to conſider aſſaſſination in any other light than as a crime.

I had been in this ſtate of ſpeculation about a week, for my maſter never ſtirred out, as he made ſickneſs his excuſe for quitting the ſervice, when his brother having occaſion for ſome money to ſend to *Liſbon*, on the grand deſign, the bag in which I was, was ordered for that ſervice; the brothers having joined their fortunes, as well as their endeavours, in the promotion of it.—I now changed my maſter again, and ſet out for *Liſbon*, in the poſſeſſion of one of the ſociety, who was to deliver us to a particular perſon there.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

CHRYSAL *propoſes a political ſcheme, that will never take place, to ſettle the peace of* GERMANY. *A ſhort view of the war between the* FRENCH *and* ENGLISH, *with the motives of the former for transferring the ſeat of it into* GERMANY. *Inſidious ambition meets a juſt diſappointment.*

IN ſo complicated an undertaking, there neceſſarily muſt be a great number of engines at work, and in many different places, upon the regularity and agreement of whoſe motions depends the ſucceſs of the whole. The perſon by whom I was ſent to *Liſbon*, was not to go directly thither, but to take a large circuit, and call at ſeveral places in his way, to ſee that all moved in concert, and every thing was properly prepared for the main action, that precipitancy ſhould not defeat the deſign a ſecond time.

It is not neceſſary to recount all the circumſtances of this tour, which, for the moſt part, were no more than the common occurrences upon ſuch occaſions; I ſhall, therefore, take notice only of ſuch few, as, for their ſingularity, and importance, may deſerve attention. As to the ſecret motive of the journey (for that alledged was only to inſpect, as uſual, into the private concerns of the order) it has been already ſo well explained, that it is ſufficient to ſay every thing exceeded expectation,

expectation, and gave the ſtrongeſt aſſurance of ſucceſs.

As the war had overſpread all *Germany*, it was impoſſible for my maſter to avoid falling in with ſome of the armies, which were then in the field; but this gave him no concern: he was bleſſed with one of thoſe ready geniuſes, that can put on any appearance ſo naturally, as to deceive ſuſpicion itſelf; beſide, that he had paſſports, under one character or another, from every power engaged in the war.

The firſt event worth remark that occurred to us (for the nature of war and its operations in general have been ſufficiently explained before) was in the army of the allies of the king of *Bulgaria*, into which my maſter entered, in the character of a Jewiſh agent. This army was compoſed of the forces of ſeveral of the ſmaller *German* ſtates (who were hired by the *Engliſh*, to defend their own liberties) a ſmall number of *Bulgarians*, and a conſiderable body of *Engliſh* troops.

You are ſurpriſed to hear, that people ſhould require to be paid to fight for themſelves in ſo intereſting a cauſe; but ſo it is; and ſo it will continue to be, while a number of little ſovereigns aſſume the ſtate, and live in the luxury of the greateſt kings; for, as their own revenues are inſufficient to ſupport the expenſe, they will be ready to ſell themſelves to the firſt that offers, for an immediate ſupply, without looking forward to, or regarding the conſequences of, ſuch inconſiderate, ſuch wretched venality. They have, indeed, this excuſe, which the general depravity of mankind ſeems to juſtify their alledging, that, as their ruin would involve greater ſtates in ſome inconveniencies,

niencies, they find theſe will rather ſubmit to this groſs impoſition, than ſuffer them to be ſwallowed up by others, who would grow too powerful by this accretion.

Baſe as ſuch a proſtitution of principle muſt appear, it has been ſo ſucceſsfully practiſed (and this not by thoſe poor princes alone, the *Auſtrians* and *Spaniards* occaſionally, and the *Dutch* conſtantly availing themſelves of it) that *England* in particular has been drawn in to bear a part, from which, by her ſituation, ſhe ſeemed exempted by Heaven, in every war that has diſtracted *Europe* for ſome ages, to an expenſe of blood and treaſure, which is already ſeverely felt, and muſt, if purſued much farther, involve it in the very ruin it thus ſtrives to avert.

There is one, and one only remedy for this; but that is attended with difficulties, which will prevent its being applied, till the evil itſelf ſhall work its own redreſs—a period, that, to human foreſight, ſeems not far diſtant at preſent. This is taking away the power of theſe petty tyrants, who diſgrace the name of ſovereign, and uniting their territories into one ſtate, of ſtrength ſufficient to ſupport itſelf. For, while thoſe princes have any power left, they will, conſiſtently with their preſent ſyſtems of policy, oppoſe this; but the manner in which they have conducted themſelves in this war, if not ſpeedily altered, will ſo effectually reduce that power, that they will be no longer able to reſiſt, but muſt paſſively ſubmit to the dominion of whoever will undertake their ſupport: an event as much to be deſired by their own immediate ſubjects, as by the other ſtates, which thus ſuffer by their abſurd and iniquitous conduct; as the ſevereſt form of one government is prefer-

able to the capricious rule of ſeveral tyrants, whoſe poverty and pride put them upon every method of making the moſt of their wretched people, without any regard to the eſtabliſhed rules of juſtice, or even the common rights of humanity. The uſual objection to this expedient, of its overturning the liberty of *Germany*, which they make ſo great a noiſe about, is of no weight; that boaſted liberty being, at preſent, no more than the power of thoſe ſovereigns to treat their ſubjects as they pleaſe, with impunity, the reſtraining of which within juſt bounds would really be eſtabliſhing, not overturning, the liberty of mankind.

As to the war in which the *Engliſh* were at this time engaged, it was not be aſcribed ſolely to this cauſe. The inſatiable ambition of the *French* had prompted them to ſtrive for the enlargement of their territories in *America*, where they already poſſeſſed an hundred times more than they were able to make any uſe of. The poſſeſſions of the *Engliſh* in that part of the globe were alſo uſeleſsly extenſive; however, the boundaries having been ſettled between them, uſurpations were not to be tolerated, conſiſtently with the honour of the ſtate; beſide, if they were taken no notice of in the beginning, they might, in time, poſſibly be extended to the profitable and inhabited parts of their dominions. On this account a war was kindled between thoſe powerful and jealous neighbours, the ſeat of which was properly transferred, by the *Engliſh*, to the place in which the attack had been made upon them; where the ſuperiority of their naval force gave them ſuch advantages, that they not only recovered the places which

which had been taken from them, but alſo abſolutely overturned the *French* power in thoſe boundleſs regions, and purſued their conqueſts in every other part of the world where the *French* had made ſettlements, to the utter ruin of their naval power and trade.

As it was impoſſible for the *French* to recover theſe loſſes directly, and the ambition and avarice which firſt gave occaſion to the war was now ſtrengthened by pride, to prevent their making the conceſſions on which they might have obtained peace, they removed the ſeat of the war into *Germany*, and attacked certain powers there, with whom *England* was ſo inſeparably connected, that it could not avoid flying to their aſſiſtance, in expectation of having all their own loſſes reſtored, in return for theſe territories, if they could get poſſeſſion of them, which the number of their own land-forces, and the alliances they knew they could make among the venal *Germans*, gave them hopes of accompliſhing; a ſcheme not ill-founded, as every motive of honour and juſtice obliged the *Engliſh* to protect and indemnify an innocent people, attacked thus ſolely upon their account. As the *French*, at the ſame time that they made this attack, had alſo entered into the confederacy againſt the king of *Bulgaria*, as has been already mentioned, this neceſſarily cemented the alliance between him and *England* ſtill cloſer, and made him join as many of his troops as he could poſſibly ſpare to the army raiſed by the *Engliſh*, upon this indiſpenſable occaſion; from which conduct he received this immediate advantage, that his army engaged the attention of the *French*, and prevented their joining

ing their forces to the number of his enemies; beſide a conſiderable aſſiſtance in money, to enable him to ſupport his own troops.

It was neceſſary for me to give you this ſhort explanation of the nature of this war, though ſuch digreſſions are contrary to my deſign and inclination, that you may be able to form a proper judgement of the extraordinary occurrences I am going to relate to you.

The army through which my maſter was obliged to paſs, as I have ſaid, though paid by *England*, and the flower of it compoſed of *Britons*, was commanded by a *German* general, in diſgraceful acknowledgement of the want of military merit equal to ſuch a charge in the natives: though, to palliate the diſgrace, and ſatisfy the jealouſy of the *Engliſh*, they had the imaginary privilege of being immediately under a commander of their own, and ſubject only to their own laws, in all things, except the operations of the war, when they were of neceſſity to obey the *German* commander in chief.

Such diſtinctions create animoſities, often more prejudicial than the inconveniences they were meant to prevent. Accuſtomed to live in the moſt luxurious plenty and eaſe, and valuing themſelves upon the riches of their country, which ſupported the whole army, the *Engliſh* found fault with the victuals and accommodations provided for them, and treated the *German* troops, with whom they were joined, with contempt; who, in return, affected to deſpiſe their delicacy, and took the advantage of their want of knowledge of the language of the country to give ſuch impreſſions of them, as prevented the people from bringing them in

proviſions, with that care and chearfulneſs which their prompt and generous payment deſerved; by which means they ſuffered the inconveniencies of ſcarcity and dearth, while the others abounded.

Though ſuch feuds among the men threatened the moſt dangerous conſequences, thoſe whoſe authority ought to put a ſtop to them were far from ſtriving to reſtore that harmony, which alone could give ſucceſs to their deſigns. The commander in chief either overlooked, as beneath his notice, or was prevented, by his attention to the military operations of the campaign, from taking notice of thoſe miſunderſtandings; and the *Engliſh* commander, ambitious probably of the ſupreme command, which he imagined he might eaſily obtain, if he could make the other ſufficiently obnoxious to the *Engliſh*, inflamed them by every artifice he could uſe.

Nor did he ſtop here: whenever he was ſummoned, in conſequence of his high ſtation, for he was ſecond in command in the whole army, to attend councils for concerting the operations of the war, he made it his conſtant practice to contradict whatever was propoſed by the commander, and to treat all his ſchemes with contempt, without ever attempting to offer any thing himſelf in their place; and this he did the more effectually, as he was a ready and powerful ſpeaker, and perfectly verſed in the theory of war; whereas the commander was a thoughtful, reſerved man, of few words, whoſe whole life had been ſpent in action, and who could more eaſily have executed than explained his deſigns.

The

The conſequences of this diſagreement were very detrimental while it laſted, and muſt, in the end, have proved fatal to the army, had not the *German*, without ever attempting to diſcuſs the affair with his wordy antagoniſt, written directly to the *Britiſh* ſovereign, to inform him that he was ſo conſtantly oppoſed in all his deſigns by the *Engliſh* general, that it was impoſſible for him to do any thing of moment; wherefore he deſired either that he might have leave to reſign his command, or have his authority freed from this vexatious and dangerous oppoſition, concluding his letter with theſe remarkable words: 'Though 'in a multitude of counſellors there is ſaid to be 'much ſafety, yet, in the operations of war, if 'many are privy to the councils which direct 'them, there never can be that ſecreſy, agree-'ment, and deſpatch, which are indiſpenſably 'neceſſary to ſucceſs.'——

The monarch, who was no ſtranger to the captious and unquiet diſpoſition of the *Engliſh* general, was ſenſible of the juſtice of the *German*'s complaint, and immediately removed the cauſe of it, by giving him an unlimited power to carry on the war as it ſhould appear beſt to his own private judgement, without conſulting with, or being liable to be oppoſed by, any other perſon.

It may be thought, that the entire removal of the *Engliſh* general would have been a readier and more effectual method; but the nature of the *Engliſh* government made this not quite ſo proper, as he was deſcended from one of the moſt illuſtrious and powerful families in the kingdom, and a member of the ſenate, in which his talent for ſpeaking gave him ſuch weight, that it was judged beſt to avoid giving him cauſe for ex-

erting his abilities in oppoſition to the meaſures of the government, by removing him from an employment which he had ſollicited with all his power and intereſt; eſpecially as the immenſe expenſe of this army began to make the people uneaſy, and ready to receive any impreſſion againſt it. But the event ſhowed that this caution was ineffectual, and productive of greater evils than that which it was made uſe of to avoid.

Accordingly, from the time the *German* general received this enlargement of his authority, he planned his ſchemes without ever conſulting any perſon, or even communicating the leaſt hint of them, till the very moment of their being put in execution, when he ſent his orders with the peremptory preciſion of an abſolute ſovereign. This was a ſevere ſtroke upon the *Engliſh* general, who had been accuſtomed to canvaſs the very commands of his king, and, therefore, could badly brook ſuch ſubordination to a perſon whom he affected to hold in contempt, for the inferiority of his underſtanding. However, as it was in vain to diſpute, he obeyed in ſullen ſilence, reſolved to ſeiſe the firſt opportunity of defeating his meaſures, ſince he could no longer diſconcert his councils; and to take hold of the leaſt miſcarriage, to attack him in the *Britiſh* ſenate at the end of the campain, where he doubted not but he ſhould be able to repreſent things in ſuch a light, as to have him removed from the command, which muſt of courſe devolve upon himſelf.

This account my maſter received from a Jeſuit the very night he arrived at the camp, who, to ingratiate the ſociety the more effectually with the

the *French* king, and ſecure his intereſt and protection, ſhould any unforeſeen accident defeat their deſign, had entered into the ſervice of the *Engliſh* general, as his *valet de chambre*, for the better opportunity of diſcovering the ſchemes of the allies, which he gave conſtant intelligence of to their enemies.

CHAP. XII.

A deep-laid ſcheme diſconcerted by an accidental victory. Treachery falls into the pit it had dug for another. The true way to ſatisfy ENGLISH *ſoldiers. The diſgraced commander's motives for appealing from the will of his ſovereign to a publick tryal. His hopes are again diſappointed, and he confirms his own ruin.*

THE very morning after my maſter's arrival in the camp, an event happened that aſtoniſhed all *Europe*. The *French* army was ſo greatly ſuperiour to that of the allies, that the general was obliged to be entirely upon the defenſive; nor had his conſummate experience and indefatigable aſſiduity been able to prevent their taking ſeveral advantages by their numbers, and forcing him to a retreat that ſeemed to threaten the loſs of the country he was to defend. But, through all theſe difficulties, he perſiſted ſteadily in his own plan, and preſerved his attention cool, and ready to take any advantage that might offer.

Accordingly, that morning, upon notice of ſome motions of the enemy that indicated a deſign of attacking him, he ordered a ſmall, but ſelect body of forces, almoſt all of them *Engliſh*, to advance towards them, and receive their charge, while he ſhould make a proper diſpoſition of the reſt of his army to give the enemy battle, or make a ſecure retreat, as he ſhould ſee expedient; but the unexampled behaviour of thoſe few brave troops ſoon changed the face of the affair; for, not ſatisfied with repelling the attack of the main body of the enemy's army, they intrepidly advanced to charge them in their turn, which they did with ſuch irreſiſtible valour, that the *French* were thrown into confuſion, and obliged to abandon the field of battle.

I have ſaid before, that the tranſactions in a battle are ſo complicated, and confounded with each other, that it is impoſſible to reduce them into the regularity of a ſatisfactory deſcription; I ſhall, therefore, enter no farther into the account of this, than juſt as it concerns the conduct of the *Engliſh* general, which I had a ſufficient opportunity of obſerving, my maſter having placed himſelf near his perſon, in company with his friend.

The moment the commander in chief received an account of the unexpected effects of the valour of the troops which he had ordered to march toward the enemy, he ſent to the *Engliſh* general, who commanded all the horſe in that wing, to advance and ſuſtain them. It is impoſſible to deſcribe his ſituation, when a meſſenger from the general informed him, that a part of the army was engaged in the plain that lay before him, and ordered him to march the cavalry

cavalry under his command to their aſſiſtance. Surpriſe and reſentment at ſuch a meaſure's being taken, without his having the leaſt previous notice of it, almoſt deprived him of his reaſon; but he recovered himſelf in a moment, and drawing his ſword with an air of indignation and diſcontent, was juſt preparing to obey the orders he had received, when another meſſenger arrived, and delivered them, but with ſome variation.

This the general inſtantly perceived, and reſolved to take advantage of, to juſtify his obeying neither, in hopes, by that means, to accompliſh his ſcheme of defeating the meaſures of his commander, without any regard to the conſequences that muſt attend ſuch a conduct. Accordingly, inſtead of advancing, as he had before prepared to do, he entered into a debate with the meſſengers about this difference in their orders, and, finding each poſitive in thoſe he delivered, he coolly determined to go himſelf to the general for an explanation of them; by trifling away the critical moment in which manner he expected that the part of the allied army which was engaged would be beaten for want of a proper and timely ſupport, when he might have the glory of covering their retreat, and ſaving the whole army from a defeat, and the pleaſure of effectually ruining the character of the general, by attributing the whole misfortune to his not taking the advice of his council, or even communicating his deſigns to them in proper time.

Such a ſcheme was but too likely to ſucceed, had not the unparalleled bravery of the troops, whom he thus deſigned to have ſacrificed to his ambition and reſentment, diſappointed it beyond all human

probability, as I have obſerved before, and actually beaten the whole army of the enemy, though ten times their number, out of the field, while he was taking advantage of a pretext to abandon them to ruin.

The ſituation of his mind, when, upon his coming up to the general, he heard the victory was won, may be better conceived than deſcribed. The cool diſtant reception he met with gave him notice of the ſtorm which was ready to burſt over his head; and he ſaw that the ſcheme he had laid ſo deeply to perpetrate the ruin of another, had inevitably worked his own, as the very accuſations which he had intended to bring againſt his general would now recoil upon himſelf with tenfold force.

According to his fears, the general next morning publickly paſſed an implicit cenſure on his conduct, which he ſaw received with ſuch univerſal approbation, that he thought it proper to reſign his command, for fear of perſonal inſult from the incenſed ſoldiers, and return home, where he did not doubt but the intereſt of his family, and his own eloquence and addreſs, would vindicate his character at leaſt, if not ſtill accompliſh his deſigns againſt the general.

Though I loſt ſight of him at this time, yet, as I had an opportunity afterwards of coming to the knowledge of the whole affair, I think it better, and leſs trouble to us both, to continue the account here, than break my narrative with it in another place.

The firſt conſtruction which was put upon his conduct was, that it proceeded from cowardice; an opinion, which the cruelty of his temper to thoſe under his command gave no ſmall weight to,

to, from this generally juſt maxim, that *the cruel are always cowards*; and which many inſignificant parts of his former conduct were alledged to confirm: but I have ſhown that it ſprang from another much leſs juſtifiable cauſe; I ſay, leſs juſtifiable, as cowardice is a natural infirmity, which a man is no more accountable for than for his being born blind or lame; but ſuch a ſcheme as his was a premeditated crime, and aggravated with the blackeſt circumſtances.

The firſt conſequence of his quitting the army was a perfect harmony between the *Engliſh* and *Germans*; the glory they had acquired upon this occaſion raiſing the ſpirits of the former ſo high, that they thought no more of the inconveniencies they had complained of before, but readily followed the example of their new commander, whom they all loved, and entered into friendſhip with their fellow-ſoldiers, as if there had never been any jealouſy between them; who, on the other hand, were ſo ſtruck with their gallant behaviour, and ſo ſenſible of the advantages gained by it, that they no longer accuſed them of improper delicacy, or ſtrove to do them ill offices with the natives of the country, as before. But what completed the happineſs of the *Engliſh*, was the commander in chief's indulging their natural thirſt for glory under their preſent commander, by giving them the poſt of honour upon all occaſions, and taking publick notice of their valour, the honour of which they eſteemed a ſufficient recompenſe for the ſevereſt fatigues and dangers: an indulgence which it was not in his power to give before, as their late commander had always oppoſed their being ex-

poſed to danger, out of an affected regard to them, as if they were of greater conſequence than the reſt of the army, or joined it only to make a figure, and not to do any ſervice.

As ſoon as the late general arrived in *England*, his ſovereign, who had been informed of the whole affair, immediately deprived him of his many very lucrative and honourable employments, and diſmiſſed him his ſervice; an inſtance of clemency which few other princes would have ſhown, and which regard to the merits of his illuſtrious anceſtors alone procured for him.

But ſo far was he from having a proper ſenſe of this lenity, or acquieſcing in the ſentence of his ſovereign, that he loudly aſſerted his being wronged, and demanded a tryal, to vindicate his character, with all the aſſurance of conſcious innocence.

This was the higheſt inſult that could be offered to a prince, as it impeached his juſtice, and queſtioned his power in the tendereſt point. However, he ſcorned to take any advantage of it, but, waving every perſonal reſentment, condeſcended to grant the tryal demanded; but with this expreſs declaration, that, as it was at the inſtance of the party, and without any legal neceſſity, he ſhould abide by the ſentence of his judges, be it what it would, as he would never interfere further. But this declaration was of little weight, for the general was well adviſed, before he ſollicited the tryal, that, according to the laws of the country, he was exempted from the danger of it, by his being deprived of all his military employments, as they only made a *Briton* ſubject to military law, by which he muſt be tried;

tried; and this exemption was the real reaſon of his being ſo eager for a tryal.

But, though his life might be out of danger by this ſubterfuge, the tryal completed the ruin of his character beyond all poſſibility of recovery, as, upon the moſt impartial examination, his neglect of the orders of his commander, and the pernicious conſequences of it, by the loſs of ſo favourable an opportunity of entirely ruining the army of the enemy, and, perhaps, putting an end to the war, by that means appeared ſo plainly, that the juſtice of his being diſmiſſed the ſervice was not only aſſerted, but he was alſo declared incapable of ever being admitted into it again: and thus he fell, a ſecond time, a victim to his own ſchemes. As to the victory which had been the immediate cauſe of his ruin, as ſoon as the circumſtances of it, as related here, came to be known to the world, the general loſt the glory which, in the firſt emotions of joy and admiration, had been ſo laviſhly heaped upon him for it; and it was juſtly aſcribed to accident, as human foreſight could not poſſibly have formed any plan for ſuch an improbable inſtance of bravery as that which obtained it.

CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAL *arrives at* BRUSSELS. *The great ſource of Jeſuitical influence. Anecdotes of a man of pleaſure and a lady of faſhion. Their hiſtory concluded in character.*

AS ſoon as the confuſion of ſuch an event was a little over, and my maſter thought he could travel in ſafety, he quitted the camp of the conquerors, and throwing off the character of a Jew, which, as I ſaid, he had bor'n there, purſued his journey to *Bruſſels* in his own, where he was to receive further inſtructions; for, though *the great deſign* was carried on by every member of the ſociety, yet the real ſecret of it was known only to a few of the heads, whoſe orders the reſt obeyed with an implicit exactneſs, fidelity, and zeal, never equalled by the ſubjects of any ſovereign upon earth, ſince the days of *the old man of the mountain.*

It was ſome time before theſe inſtructions arrived; which gave me an opportunity of learning the intrigues of that debauched, gaudy, inſignificant court, by my maſter's intimacy with the confeſſor of the governour, who, beſides the advantage of that character to gain information, was himſelf a man of pleaſure in the moſt extenſive ſenſe of the phraſe, and utterly free from every reſtraint of principle that could oppoſe its gratification; though he had the addreſs to maintain the dignity of his ſtation, by his ſecreſy and regard to propriety of appearance.

There

There is nothing that contributes ſo much to the influence which the Jeſuits poſſeſs over the minds of the people, as their knowledge of the ſecret hiſtory of their lives. To acquire this, they ſtop at nothing; they aſſume all characters, mix in all companies, and enter into every ſcene of vicious pleaſure, where reſerve is thrown off, and the whole heart appears without diſguiſe. Such an opportunity of information, therefore, was not to be miſſed. Accordingly, the evening after my maſter's arrival, he went with his friend to court, where they had a liberty of placing themſelves in a convenient ſituation, to ſee all the company, and make their remarks without danger of being overheard; ſuch as were merely political I ſhall omit, as I am ſick of ſuch a ſtupid ſubject, and only take notice of thoſe which may extend your knowledge of the human heart.——'Obſerve that little mean-looking, ill-'favoured perſon' (ſaid the confeſſor, continuing a converſation, the beginning of which I need not repeat) 'who acts as maſter of the ceremonies. 'You ſee his feeble frame is quite worn out with 'debauchery, and he nods over the grave in an-'ticipated old age, yet ſtill he affects an air of 'levity and youth, and ſtrives to inflame others, 'by his diſcourſe, to vices which he is no longer 'able to participate of himſelf: but this is all 'grimace; and he aſſumes this appearance of 'gaiety, to hide the gloomy diſcontent and re-'morſe that prey upon his heart.

'There is ſomething ſo particular in the ſtory 'of this man, that it may be worth while to give 'you a ſhort ſketch of it. He is a native of a neigh-'bouring country, where his father, from the low-'eſt ſtate of poverty, amaſſed ſuch wealth in trade,

'that his vanity prompted him to get his family 'ennobled, to hide the meanneſs of his original. 'There is ſomething ſo abſurdly wrong in pur-'chaſed nobility, that it always turns the heads 'of the purchaſers, perhaps in juſt retribution for 'ſo flagrant an abuſe of an inſtitution meant as 'a reward for merit. The *ennobled* man lived 'not to ſhow the truth of this obſervation; 'but his ſons abundantly made up for that, the 'elder laviſhing his wealth on every kind of ex-'penſive vanity, and the younger, the perſon you 'ſee, glorying in every kind of debauchery, as 'if vice and folly were the prerogatives of their '*honour*.

'In the courſe of a life of pleaſure he con-'tracted an acquaintance with that lady, whom 'you ſee at the upper end of the room. Though 'nature had never meant him for a man of in-'trigue, and debauchery had exhauſted even the 'little powers ſhe gave, he thought it would 'have been inconſiſtent with his character of a 'man of pleaſure, not to commence an affair of 'gallantry with ſo deſireable a perſon. Ac-'cordingly, as ſhe happened to be married, he 'directly cultivated an intimacy with her huſ-'band, into whoſe unguarded confidence he 'ſo far inſinuated himſelf, as to receive many 'acts of friendſhip from him. To a man who 'had any ſenſe of honour or honeſty, this would 'have been an irreſiſtible reaſon for deſiſting from 'his baſe deſign; but he was above ſuch *vulgar* 'reſtraints, and genteelly took the opportunity 'of the huſband's friendſhip to debauch the vir-'tue of the wife.

'Nothing but the moſt abandoned profligacy 'in the woman could have given ſucceſs to ſuch

'an

'an attempt, as the huſband exceeded the paramour in very natural endowment of mind and perſon, beyond every degree of compariſon; but the caprice of vicious inclination is not to be accounted for; it will loath the moſt exquiſite delicacies, and ſate itſelf on garbage.

'They had not continued their commerce long, when their indiſcretion betrayed them. It is impoſſible to deſcribe the aſtoniſhment and rage of the injured huſband, at the diſcovery! Had it been poſſible, he would have doubted his ſenſes, which were witneſſes to his diſgrace. In the firſt emotions of his rage, he was going to break in upon them, and take the revenge which his ſuperiour ſtrength amply put in his power; but a moment's reflexion ſhowed him the folly of ſuch an action, and determined him to take the ſafer and more ſevere revenge of the law.

'Accordingly, he withdrew without being perceived by them, and bringing ſome of his ſervants to teſtify their crimes, as ſoon as he had ſecured the proof neceſſary to obtain his ſatisfaction, entered the room, in the height of their dalliance, and coolly telling them that it would be proper for them to chooſe another ſcene for their pleaſure, beſide his houſe, retired, and left them to their meditations.

'This conduct convinced them of his deſign, and that they had not a moment to loſe, to avoid ſome of the moſt diſagreeable conſequences of it: as ſoon, therefore, as they recovered from the firſt impreſſions of their aſtoniſhment, they directly departed together, and concealing the place of their retirement,

'for

'for fear of a purſuit, quitted the territories of 'the ſtate as ſoon as they poſſibly could.

'But they might have ſpared themſelves that 'trouble; the revenge which the huſband ſought 'was of another nature: he directly inſtituted a 'ſuit at law againſt them, by which, as he 'had ſufficient proof of their guilt, he obtained a 'divorce from his wife, and ſuch damages againſt 'the violator of his bed, as made it impoſſible 'for him ever to return to his country, without 'he deſigned to languiſh out the reſt of his days 'in a priſon.

'The lovers, in the mean time, were far 'from being happy in the uninterrupted enjoy-'ment of each other. Variety and the myſtery 'of intrigue were all that tempted them to the 'correſpondence at firſt; and now that theſe 'were loſt, reflexion opened their eyes to the 'conſequences of their folly, and made them 'look upon each other as the authours of their 'mutual ruin. Such thoughts ſoon cool the moſt 'ardent love; what effect then muſt they have 'upon perſons in their ſituation? However, ne-'ceſſity obliged them to conceal their ſentiments; 'and, as ſoon as the divorce gave them liberty, 'they married, to preſerve the appearance of a 'paſſion they never felt, and obtain a ſupport 'from their families, which they could not have 'expected on any other terms.

'When this was done, and that neceſſity re-'moved, the averſion which they had long enter-'tained broke out in the moſt violent man-'ner. They lived in a ſtate of eternal warfare, 'in which the wife threw off all regard to de-'cency, even ſo far as to take advantage 'of her ſuperiour ſtrength, and frequently beat

'her

'her feeble husband. Observe that scar on his 'upper lip! the third day of their happy mar-'riage, he received that mark of her rage from 'the heel of her slipper, with which she also beat 'out two of his teeth, whose place he now sup-'plies with artificial ones.

'But the viciousness of her inclination, which 'first brought him into this wretched situation, 'released him from it sooner than he deserved. 'They had fixed their residence here, where the 'prince soon happened to take a liking to her, 'the first overture of which she eagerly embraced; 'and completed the infamy of her character, by 'quitting her second husband to become his mi-'stress; in which station you behold her at pre-'sent.

'Though such a disgrace seemed to be a judi-'cial retaliation upon the husband, for his own 'base crime, he was insensible of it; and instead 'of taking advantage of his deliverance, and re-'tiring to some place where his shame was not 'known, meanly accepted of the employment in 'which you see him, and submitted to be the slave 'of her vice and insolence.

'But though his hatred for her, and passion for 'the pomp and dissipation of a court, make him 'brave the infamy of such a situation, sickness, the 'constant consequence of debauchery, the faith-'ful monitor of guilt, has awoke his conscience 'to a sense of the crime that has sunk him so low, 'and raised a remorse that wastes his life, though 'he thus absurdly strives to drown its voice in 'the noise of vanity and vice.'

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

The confeſſor entertains CHRYSAL's *maſter with another not uncommon character. The modern method of repairing a broken fortune. The general conſequence of female ambition. A curious amour commenced in an odd manner, and carried on in as odd a place.*

MY maſter was beginning to make ſome obvious reflexions on this account, but his friend ſoon diverted his attention to another object. 'Obſerve' (ſaid he, pointing to a perſon who bore all the external marks of nobility in his habit and appearance) 'a ſtriking proof 'of the inſignificance of being born to wealth and 'honours! Who that ſees the deſpicable figure 'which this man makes here, a voluntary exile 'from his own country, where his rank and 'fortune placed him in the moſt exalted and 'advantageous light, can ever throw away a 'moment's thought on heaping up riches, or 'obtaining honours to perpetuate his name, and 'aggrandiſe his family, the folly and profuſion 'of a ſingle member of which may thus diſappoint 'his hopes, and make his very virtues an aggra-'vation of his own degeneracy and reproach?

'In a rank ſcarce inferior to that of a ſo-'vereign, and poſſeſſed of a fortune ſufficient to 'ſupport it with dignity to himſelf, and be-'nefit to the community, did this man enter

'into

'into life; but a few years of the diſſipation of 'what is falſely called a life of pleaſure diſtreſſed 'his fortune, and debaſed his principles, to ſuch 'a degree, that he was obliged, and not aſhamed, 'to have recourſe to the mean method of a mer-'cenary marriage, to retrieve his affairs, and en-'able him to ſupport the external appearance of 'his character.

'The conſtant conſequences of theſe marriages 'might be ſufficient to open the eyes of the un-'happy victims of them to ſuch a dangerous folly; 'but vanity poſſeſſes ſo abſolute an empire over 'the female heart, that nothing can prevent the 'gratification of it.

'The female whom this perſon pitched upon, 'as proper for his purpoſe, on account of her im-'menſe wealth, was deſtitute of every charm of 'mind and perſon, to attract or preſerve love or 'eſteem. But few are ſenſible of their own de-'ficiencies, or can bear to be informed of them. 'On his making the firſt overture to her, all her 'real friends took the alarm; they drew his cha-'racter in proper colours; they ſhowed her, that 'neceſſity, not inclination, was the motive of 'his addreſſes, and they laid the inevitable conſe-'quences of a connexion with ſuch a perſon 'before her in the ſtrongeſt light: but all was in 'vain! Her heart was fixed upon rank and pre-'cedence, and, ſo ſhe could obtain them, ſhe left 'the reſt to chance.

'Accordingly, as ſhe was abſolutely her own 'miſtreſs, the match was ſoon made, to the pre-'ſent ſatisfaction of both parties. He got her 'fortune, to pay his debts, and purſue his plea-'ſures; and ſhe rode in a coach, with coronets, 'and was called *her Grace*.

'But

'But this mutual happineſs did not laſt long; 'the moment he got poſſeſſion of her fortune all 'his wiſhes were fulfilled, and, as he had nothing 'further to expect, he did not think it neceſſary 'for him to continue any appearances of love, 'or even complaiſance, for an object really diſ-'agreeable to him. Accordingly, the very morn-'ing after his marriage, he ſet out, upon a party 'of pleaſure, with ſome of his former compa-'nions; and left the bride by herſelf, to receive 'the compliments, and go through the farce 'uſual on ſuch occaſions.

'Though ſuch behaviour muſt appear baſe and 'ungenerous to the laſt degree, yet ſhe had no 'right to complain of it, as ſhe could not expect 'any other from his known character, and mo-'tives for marriage; ſhe, therefore, put the beſt 'face on the matter, and, whether from intoxi-'cation at her elevation, or indifference to him, 'ſeemed to be inſenſible of the ſlight, and went 'through the ceremony and parade with all the 'appearance of pleaſure and content, leaving him 'to purſue his own inclinations, without moleſt-'ation or complaint.

'But this calm did not hold long. As ſoon as 'her new dignity loſt the charms of novelty, na-'ture awoke, as from a dream, and convinced 'her, that ſomething more than empty ſhow was 'neceſſary to human happineſs: but, alas! this 'conviction came too late; and all her expoſtu-'lations were as ineffectual to induce the tender-'neſs or eſteem of her huſband, as thoſe of her 'friends had been with her, to prevent her mar-'rying him. On the contrary, they turned his 'indifference into averſion, and made him treat

'her

'her with indignity and contempt, inſulting her 'deformity, and ridiculing the vanity that had 'prompted her to ſacrifice her fortune for a bare 'title.

'Hard as ſuch treatment was to be ſubmitted 'to, ſhe had no redreſs, but was obliged to bear 'it in ſilence, without even the poor conſolation 'of compaſſion to mitigate her ſufferings. At 'length a further aggravation of her wrongs gave 'her the pleaſure of revenge, by driving him again 'into the diſtreſſes from which her folly had re-'lieved him.

'In the purſuit of pleaſure, to which he had 'ſacrificed his character and fortune, he never 'had even the excuſe of a refined taſte, or par-'ticular paſſion, to palliate his folly, but blindly 'followed the example of his companions, or 'was a ſlave to every groſs impulſe of his own 'caprice, without the leaſt notion of delicacy, 'or even decency, to direct him. As he was 'ſtrolling alone about his houſe, one unhappy 'evening, when he had no company to divert 'his thoughts, he happened, juſt as it grew dark, 'to overhear two perſons, a male and female, 'in earneſt converſation. Curioſity prompting 'him to liſten, he ſoon diſcovered, that love 'was the ſubject of their diſcourſe, in which the 'man, whom, by his voice, he knew to be one 'of his huntſman's helpers, was ſo ſucceſsful, 'that he perſuaded the fair-one to promiſe him 'a meeting, half an hour after, in the dog-'kennel.

'Though the place of aſſignation might have 'deterred any perſon, whoſe ſenſes, as well as 'his inclinations, were not totally debauched,

'from

'from attempting to ſupplant the happy lover, 'the novelty of ſuch an adventure made his lord-'ſhip overlook that, and reſolve to ſupply his 'dog-boy's place. Accordingly, he retired un-'perceived, and going to the ſtables, ordered him 'to be called, and ſent him directly on a meſſage 'ſome miles off, without giving him an oppor-'tunity of letting his miſtreſs know any thing of 'the matter.

'As ſoon as the time appointed drew near, his 'lordſhip went to the agreeable ſcene, where the 'punctual fair one did not let him wait long. 'As he was about the dog-boy's ſize, and the 'place was quite dark, ſhe never perceived the 'change put upon her, but laviſhed her careſſes 'upon him with the greateſt tenderneſs, vowing 'never more to have any correſpondence with 'the pantry-boy or ſcullion, who, it ſeems were 'the dog-boy's formidable rivals, but to be always 'conſtant to him alone; and took her leave of 'him, with a promiſe to meet him there at the 'ſame time, next evening.

'Diſguſting as every circumſtance of this af-'fair ſhould have been, the oddity of it, with the 'pleaſure of ſupplanting another, even ſo mean 'a perſon, and in ſo unworthy an object, made 'him determine to be punctual to her appoint-'ment. But then the difficulty was, how to pre-'vent his rival's traverſing his deſign, for his 'delicacy was not in the leaſt alarmed at the 'thought of his participating in her favours. He 'was alſo at a loſs to know, who the obliging 'female might be, for the darkneſs that con-'cealed him was equally favourable to her, and 'he was a ſtranger to her voice; nor did he care 'to aſk any queſtions, as that would betray his

'own

'own impoſture, and bring on an explanation 'that he did not deſire, both as his greateſt plea-'ſure was in the cheat, and the diſcovery might 'be attended with circumſtances he ſhould chooſe 'to avoid, in caſe the female was diſagreeable to 'him.

'To obviate all theſe inconveniencies, he order-'ed his rival to attend him the moment he return-'ed, when he gave him a letter to carry that in-'ſtant to a gentleman who lived about twenty 'miles off, with directions to be back early the 'next day with an anſwer. This he ſaid aloud, 'in the hearing of all his ſervants, that, if his 'miſtreſs ſhould happen to hear ofher lover's be-'ing ſent from home, ſhe might alſo have reaſon 'to expect his return time enough to keep the ap-'pointment; but, to prevent this, he had deſired 'the perſon to whom he wrote, to keep the meſ-'ſenger, as if for an anſwer of the letter, two or 'three days; in which time he concluded he him-'ſelf ſhould be tired of his amour.

CHAP. XV.

Continued: His lordſhip's ſcheme to fling his rival unluckily diſappointed. A diſagreeable meeting occaſions ſtrange diſcoveries. Woman never at a loſs. Law often ſpoils ſport.

'PLEASED with the ſagacity of this ſcheme 'he waited for the next evening, with an 'impatience that he did not often feel on ſuch 'occaſions;

'occaſions; but an unlucky accident diſappointed 'his deſigns. The gentleman to whom he wrote 'the letter happened not to be at home, nor was 'expected for a day or two; wherefore, as his 'lord had ordered him to make haſte back, he left 'the letter, and returned without any delay, per-'haps not more in obedience to his orders, than 'from his impatience to retrieve the diſappoint-'ment his deſires had met, by his abſence, the 'evening before.

'As ſoon as he alighted, therefore, his firſt 'care was to find out his miſtreſs, to tell her the 'reaſon of his diſappointing her the evening be-'fore, and to make a new affignation for that; 'but what was their mutual ſurpriſe when they 'came to compare notes! As he inſiſted on his 'not having attended the appointment, ſhe flew 'into a rage, and accuſed him of having betrayed 'her baſely to ſome of his companions; and, as 'ſhe poſitively aſſerted her having met ſome perſon 'there, he accuſed her, with equal warmth, of 'inconſtancy, and ſacrificing him to ſome of his 'rivals, on whom he vowed the ſevereſt ven-'geance, if he ſhould ever find him out.

'As this altercation was not carried on with 'much delicacy on either ſide, it ſoon produced 'an abſolute rupture between the lovers, who 'ſeparated with ſentiments for each other very 'different from thoſe with which they met. 'The dog-boy, in an hour or too, when his 'reſentment cooled a little, recollected that it 'might be proper to let his lord know the ſuc-'ceſs of his meſſage, who ſent for him into his 'preſence directly; and being freed from his 'apprehenſions, by hearing that he was *but that*

'*moment* returned, ordered him to ſet out again 'inſtantly, and deliver the letter to the gentle-'man, wherever he was, and not return without 'an anſwer.

'His orders were ſo urgent that the fellow did 'not dare to make the leaſt delay; but fortune, 'that ſeemed reſolved to croſs his lordſhip's de-'ſigns, contrived it ſo, that he met the gentleman 'on his road, without having called at home, or 'received the letter that had been left for him. 'Upon the dog-boy's informing him of it, he 'concluded, as he was much nearer to his lord-'ſhip's than to his own houſe, that it was the 'readieſt way for him to wait upon him directly, 'without minding to ſend the man for the let-'ter. Accordingly, he bade him turn back, and 'ride on before him, to acquaint his lordſhip of 'his coming.

'Though it was late when he had ſet out the 'ſecond time, he made ſuch haſte, that he reached 'home juſt at the time of his lordſhip's appoint-'ment; when it unluckily coming into his head, 'that his perfidious miſtreſs might poſſibly have 'taken the advantage of his abſence, to make an-'other aſſignation in his dog-kennel, the firſt thing 'he did, the moment he diſmounted from his 'horſe, was to go there, to ſee if any one had in-'vaded his territories.

'Nor was his ſuſpicion diſappointed; for the 'fair-one was ſo uneaſy to unravel the myſtery 'of the adventure of the evening before, that ſhe 'punctually attended her appointment, where ſhe 'had not waited many minutes before her un-'known lover arrived. The ſcene of their 'meeting was ſo dark, that it was impoſſible for 'either of them to know the other. However,

'ſhe

'she soon thought of a method to remedy this, 'which was, to purloin something out of his 'pockets, by which she might discover who he 'was, without betraying herself; for she soon 'found, that he knew no more of her than she 'did of him.

'She had just executed her design, and was 'taking her leave of her lover, when his jea'lous rival came upon them unawares, and, over'hearing their expressions of fondness, was so 'enraged, that he resolved to take immediate re'venge: accordingly, he approached them with'out any noise, and, turning the but-end of his 'whip, aimed a stroke so unluckily, though at a 'venture, that it felled his lordship to the ground. 'The female, who instantly guessed what was the 'matter, took advantage of the darkness to make 'her escape, which she happily effected without 'any disaster, the dog-boy stumbling over his 'fallen adversary, the first step he advanced to 'pursue her.

'His lordship, half recovered from the blow, 'laid hold of his antagonist, who grappling with 'him directly, a battle ensued, in which nobility 'was so rudely handled, that his lordship was 'obliged to declare himself, and cry out for quar'ter. It is easy to conceive the confusion of the 'conqueror upon this discovery; he instantly strove 'to disengage himself, and make his escape; 'but his lordship held him fast, promising to for'give him, though, if he would have the discre'tion never to mention a syllable of the affair, 'and inform him who the female was with whom 'he had made the assignation to meet in this place 'the evening before.

'These

'These conditions were too easy not to be immediately complied with. He accordingly swore eternal secresy, and readily told his lordship that the girl was no other than the kitchen-maid's daughter, who served as a scullion-wench under her mother.

'This discovery of his mistress's quality was almost as disagreeable to his lordship, as the effect of the dog-boy's jealousy. However, he smothered his vexation, and stealing secretly into the house, that he might not be seen in such a condition, retired to his own apartment by himself, to change his clothes, and wash off the blood and dirt with which he was all over plentifully daubed.

'As soon as he had set himself somewhat to rights, he rang for his *valet de chambre*, who was his usual agent upon such occasions, and ordered him to bring the kitchen-maid's daughter up to him. The valet, who was sufficiently acquainted with the capriciousness of his master's taste, was not in the least surprised at his choice of such an object, but obeyed him directly.

'The fortunate female, who had found out the quality of her new lover by his snuff-box, which she had picked out of his pocket, was almost afraid to obey the glad summons, for fear she might be suspected of having designedly occasioned the outrage his lordship had lately met; however, her ambition getting the better of her fear, she suffered herself to be prevailed on, and went trembling and blushing, in all the bashfulness of virgin innocence, to know his lordship's commands.

'If he had been ſurpriſed at the diſcovery of 'her condition, he was much more agreeably ſo 'at the ſight of her; for, though ſhe was far 'from being handſome, there was ſomething in 'her face, which, with her extreme youth, and a 'glow of health that her confuſion heightened 'not a little, ſtruck his fancy in an uncommon 'manner. He, therefore, without giving her the 'leaſt hint of what had happened, as he imagined 'ſhe knew nothing of him, made no ceremony 'of propoſing love to her. But, young as ſhe 'was, ſhe had too much woman in her ſoul to 'comply ſo eaſily, though there was nothing ſhe 'deſired more ardently. Accordingly, ſhe refuſed 'his lordſhip with the moſt reſpectful modeſty; 'and, on urging his requeſt further, threw herſelf 'at his feet in a flood of tears, and begged him to 'have compaſſion upon her friendleſs youth and 'innocence.

'Such behaviour would have made him doubt 'the dog-boy's information, did not the ſound 'of her voice convince him ſhe was the perſon. 'He, therefore, laughed at her artifice, and told 'her, that, as ſoon as the farce was ended, he 'ſhould expect another anſwer, as he knew ſhe 'had granted to others the favour he aſked of 'her.

'This convinced her that he had diſcovered 'her, and that it was neceſſary for her to en-'large her ſcheme, to accompliſh the deſign ſhe 'had formed, of eſtabliſhing a laſting intereſt 'in his affections. Accordingly, upon his ſay-'ing this, ſhe embraced his knees in a ſeeming 'agony of diſtreſs, and, conjuring him to have 'mercy on her folly, owned that ſhe had tranſ-'greſſed with one, and one only, who had made

'ſuch

'such an impreſſion upon her heart, that though 'ſhe had taken him for another, and knew not 'even who he was, ſhe had made a vow never to 'repeat her folly with any other.

'The candour of this confeſſion, the greateſt 'part of which he thought he knew to be true, 'completed her conqueſt over him. He raiſed her 'from the ground, and, embracing her tenderly, 'diſcovered himſelf to her. The conſequence is 'obvious. She immediately appeared in publick 'as his miſtreſs, and had the addreſs to accom-'modate herſelf ſo entirely to his caprices, that 'ſhe ſoon gained the abſolute maſtery of his heart. 'As for the poor dog-boy, he was turned off, of 'courſe, as an offenſe to her ſight, though not 'without a conſiderable gratuity, to purchaſe his 'ſilence; but that was impoſſible; the moment 'he left the houſe, he looked upon himſelf as freed 'from the neceſſity of concealing it any longer, 'and made it the common ſubject of his diſcourſe, 'till it became as publickly known as his lord-'ſhip's name.

'This happened juſt as his affairs became 'again ſo diſtreſſed, that he was forced to with-'hold the ſupport he had allowed his wife. She, 'therefore, directly took the advantage of it, to 'ſue him for a ſeparate maintenance, on the plea 'of his thus living in avowed adultery. The 'fact was too flagrant to be denied; and his 'infatuation was ſuch, that he would not re-'move the cauſe, to avoid the conſequence of 'the ſuit, but choſe to quit his native country, 'and come here with his miſtreſs, to live in the 'diſeſteem and contempt you ſee him treated 'with, on the poor pittance of his fortune, which 'the law allows him for his ſupport; the reſt,

'much the greater part of it, being assigned for 'the maintenance of his wife, and payment of his 'debts.'

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL's master meets an old acquaintance, who relates the history of his life. Curious anecdotes of a GREAT *man.*

MY master's friend proceeded to give him an account of several other persons who were present; but as his remarks were confined to their political characters, I shall omit them, as I said before. On these I have dwelt so long, because they display a just, however disagreeable picture of human nature.

The day after my master's being with his friend at court, he went to see an old acquaintance of his. The principles of the soul are sometimes so strong, as to baffle hypocrisy, and mark the character of a man, in the lineaments of his visage, to every common eye. The first view of my master's old friend and acquaintance struck me with horrour; every vice that can deform the human soul appeared triumphant, and unallayed with any the least tincture of virtue, in his face. Though I was no stranger to the latitude of my master's principles, the intimacy of such a person blackened my worst opinion of him. They flew to each other's arms, and, embracing with the tenderness of long-parted friends, asked each other a thousand questions, almost in a breath, concerning their mutual welfare, and the adven-

tures they had met with, ſince they had ſeen each other laſt.

In the account given by my maſter there were none but common occurrences; but the hiſtory of his friend had ſomething ſo ſtrikingly ſingular in it, that, for the curioſity of ſuch a character, I'll give you a ſhort ſketch of it, as drawn by himſelf, with this difference only, that I ſhall omit ſeveral facts too groſs for repetition, and ſoften the colouring of the whole, as the glaringneſs of it would overpower human ſight, and ſtrike imagination with horrour too ſtrong to bear.

'You have often expreſſed a curioſity, my 'friend (ſaid the ſtranger to my maſter) to learn 'the particulars of my life. That I did not gratify it, was not owing to any diffidence or diſinclination to oblige you; but becauſe I had not 'arrived at any fixed period, to make a proper 'pauſe at, and therefore an imperfect account 'could give you but little ſatisfaction. But that 'objection is now removed: I am here ſettled in a 'ſituation, which, though far below my former 'hopes, I ſhall ſtrive to be contented in, and not 'launch out any more into the fatigues and perils 'of the world, at this late ſeaſon of my life. One 'caution only I muſt hint to you, which is, that 'in the account I am going to give, I ſhall throw 'aſide all prejudice, and repreſent every thing in 'the unadorned ſimplicity of its firſt principles, 'without any regard to the received notions of 'ſelf-deluded man.——

'I was born in *France*, of poor parents, who 'were ſcarcely able to give me the firſt rudiments 'of a liberal education. To avoid a life of labour, I raſhly entered into the monaſtick, before

'had experience enough to see the folly of such 'a step: but my stay here was not long: to a 'man of sense the obligation of a vow ceases, 'with the motive that induced him to take it. I 'made my escape from the convent, and as I was 'destitute of money to support me, and as yet 'too ignorant of the ways of the world, to be 'able to live without it, was driven by necessity 'to inlist myself for a soldier. But I soon found 'that I had not gained by the change, the slavery 'of a soldier's life, being still more intolerable than 'that of a monk. I therefore had recourse to my 'former expedient for relief, and deserted the very 'first opportunity. I then threw myself at ran-'dom upon the world, without any particular 'point to direct my course to; but this did not 'discourage me: I had boldly thrown off the 'shackles which foolish man had forged for him-'self, to prevent his rising in life, and regulated 'my conduct solely by my convenience. This 'gave me a superiority over the rest of mankind, 'which I never failed to avail myself of. I look-'ed upon their follies as my inheritance, and soon 'found abundant opportunities of turning them 'to my advantage.

'For some years I lived a life of ramble, in 'the course of which I met with many adven-'tures.—At length, I thought my own country 'too narrow a sphere to confine my activity to, 'and so I went to *Spain*, where I expected an 'ample harvest from the ignorance and super-'stition of the people; but their poverty disap-'pointed my hopes, and almost starved me into 'repentance of my expedition. However, I pro-'ceeded to *Madrid*, where the credulity of a

'countryman

'countryman of my own made me amends for 'the reſerve of the natives. He not only relieved 'my immediate wants, which were too preſſing 'to be bor'n, but alſo entruſted into my hands 'ſome valuable materials for a literary work, from 'which he expected both reputation and profit. 'But I diſappointed his hopes; for, being tired of '*Spain*, I took the firſt opportunity of going to 'try my fortune in ſome other country, and car-'ried all his papers with me. Nor was this all 'he ſuffered by his confidence. I had before ex-'perienced the inconvenience of depending upon 'charity, in a country where there is ſcarce ſuf-'ficient for the neceſſities of nature. I, there-'fore, thought it proper to take all the money and 'valuable effects in his poſſeſſion, to defray the 'expenſes of my journey. As to the diſtreſs this 'might throw him into, I never regarded that a 'moment, no more than I did his being my coun-'tryman. I deſpiſed the narrowneſs of thought 'that made ſuch accidental circumſtances of any 'weight, when they claſhed with my own parti-'cular deſigns; and I eſteemed the leſſon I had 'taught him, to be more cautious whom he placed 'his confidence in, a ſufficient recompenſe for his 'loſs.

'From *Spain*, I directed my courſe to *Ger-'many*, where the political knowledge I acquired 'from my late friend's papers, made me ſo much 'taken notice of, that after ſome time, not diſ-'agreeably ſpent among the great, I was recom-'mended to the prime miniſter, and favourite of 'the king of *Poland*, as a proper perſon to be 'entruſted with the edueation of his only ſon. 'Not to diſgrace this character, I aſſumed a fic-'titious name and title, and gave out, that I had

'been obliged to leave my own country for an 'affair of honour. My employment gave me 'frequent opportunities of converſing with the 'father of my pupil, in which I diſplayed my 'ſkill in politicks to ſuch advantage, that I ſoon 'was admitted into his eſteem and confidence. 'In this intercourſe I had the honour of ſtarting 'the firſt hint of that project, which has ſince 'kindled the preſent war in *Germany*, and will 'immortaliſe his name (for he has had the un-'generous meanneſs to aſſume it to himſelf) to 'all ages.

'Such a ſituation was ſufficient to ſatisfy the 'deſires of any other man; but my ambition 'knew no bounds: I thought my patron did not 'reward my merit as it deſerved; and, in revenge, 'I reſolved to work his ruin. For this purpoſe, 'I entered into a correſpondence with ſeveral no-'blemen, who were his enemies, and, taking ad-'vantage of the opportunities his confidence gave 'me of ſeeing his papers, copied ſome, and coun-'terfeited others, that I thought neceſſary to my 'deſign, which was no leſs than to raiſe a civil 'war, in which the miniſter ſhould be ſacri-'ficed, and the maſter dethroned. But, juſt as 'my plot was ripe for execution, it was diſco-'vered, and I hurried from a palace to a priſon, 'where I was condemned to languiſh out the reſt 'of my days; my life being ſpared in compliance 'with a delicacy of my patron's, who thought it 'would be a diſgrace to him to have his ſon's tu-'tor hanged.

'When I had lain here ſome time, a happy 'thought procured me my liberty: I wrote a 'moſt penitential letter to the pope's nuncio, in 'which I diſcovered my true name, and my hav-

'ing

'ing fled from my vows; and pretending a thorough ſenſe of my guilt, and deſire of returning to my order, begged his interceſſion in my favour. My ſcheme ſucceeded! He claimed me as an eccleſiaſtic, and the king, whoſe mind was too intent on greater matters, to think of me, readily complied. I was accordingly releaſed from my priſon, but inſtead of being ſet abſolutely at liberty, as I had hoped, was ſent under a guard of eccleſiaſticks to *Rome*, where all the favour I could obtain, was to be ordered back to my convent.

'This was a great diſappointment to me; but I was obliged to ſubmit. I accordingly ſet out, guarded as before, but determined to take the firſt opportunity of making my eſcape; which I at length affected, after many vain attempts.

'To fruſtrate the purſuit of my guards, I fled into *Switzerland*, where the name of liberty flattered my hopes of doing whatever I pleaſed. The firſt thing I did there, was to abjure my religion, and profeſs their's, to conciliate their good opinion. This was no difficulty upon me, as I had long looked upon all religions with equal indifference. As I had no money, I immediately commenced authour. But, though I gained reputation, my profits were ſo inconſiderable, that I was obliged to have recourſe to other methods for my ſupport, ſome of which happening to contradict their prejudices, I was obliged to leave their dominions with circumſtances of diſgrace. You will laugh at the narrow notions of mankind, when I tell you, that the affair they made ſo great a noiſe about, was only my denying a debt which I was unable to pay, and the creditor did not even want.

'There were ſome other particulars, indeed, of 'my conduct, which would have met with a ſe-'vere fate, had I not taken prudent care to ob-'viate it. I had entered into an intimacy with 'a perſon of ſome fortune, who had an agree-'able wife. The connexions of the wife are 'always made with a view to ſome particular 'end. I had more than one in this acquaintance: 'the ſupply of my neceſſities, by the generoſity of 'the huſband, and the gratification of my plea-'ſure, by the enjoyment of the wife.——I ſuc-'ceeded in both, but was prevented by an acci-'dent from enjoying my ſucceſs long. The huſ-'band ſurpriſed us one day in a ſituation that did 'not admit of doubt. He drew his ſword, to 'have revenged his wrongs with my death; but 'I diſappointed his deſign, by preſenting a piſtol 'at his head, which I always carried about me, 'for fear of accidents. Upon this, he ran out of the 'houſe in a kind of frenzy. I ſaw the delicacy 'of my ſituation, and that my ſafety depended 'upon the proper uſe of that moment. The wife 'had ſwooned away at the firſt ſight of her huſ-'band. I ran and fetched a glaſs of water, as 'if to recover her, but conveyed a few drops into 'it, which I never went without, for any ſuch 'emergency, that delivered her for ever from all 'fear of her huſband's reſentment. I had many 'reaſons for doing this. It was in her power to 'make diſcoveries to her huſband, which I did 'not chooſe; beſide, as the ſuſpicion of her death 'would inevitably fall upon him, I thought that 'a good way to eſcape his revenge. I then quitted 'the houſe without being perceived. All things 'happened as I could wiſh. The huſband was 'obliged to fly from his country, to avoid an ig-

'nominious

'nominious death, for the murther of his wife; 'and all his effects were confiſcated to the ſtate. 'It is true, I did not entirely eſcape ſuſpicion! 'He had laid open all he knew of the affair, by 'letter, to his friends! but, though they be- 'lieved him, he had no evidence to ſupport his 'charge; ſo that I deſpiſed his impotent accuſa- 'tions.

'From *Switzerland* I once more turned my face 'to *Germany*, where my name was ſo famous for 'my political knowledge, that, a war being juſt 'ready to break out, I received conſiderable offers 'from moſt of the parties concerned, to engage 'me in their ſervice; but, though I refuſed none, 'I reſolved not to engage myſelf abſolutely to any, 'till I could know which might prove moſt ad- 'vantageous to me.'

CHAP. XVII.

Continued. He comes to ENGLAND, *where his ſervices are rejected by the ſtate, and he is obliged to exert his abilities in a lower ſphere. He gains the confidence of his landlord, from whom he borrows all he is worth, and then ſtrives to pay the debt with a halter. A good retreat is better than a bad ſtand.*

'AS *England* was likely to bear a conſiderable 'part in the war, I thought it proper to go 'over, and found the inclinations of the miniſtry 'there alſo. The riches and credulity of the in-'habitants of that country have long made it 'be eſteemed the inheritance of needy adventu-'rers. The thought of diſplaying my abilities in 'ſo fertile a ſoil inſpired me with an ardour I had 'never felt before. I already graſped all the 'wealth of the nation, and looked upon myſelf as 'the oracle of the people, and the terrour of the 'miniſtry, who would not fail to purchaſe my ſi-'lence with a penſion, that ſhould enable me to 'ſpend the reſt of my days, wherever I liked, 'with dignity and eaſe.

'Full of theſe flattering hopes, I arrived in '*London*, where I ſoon found, that, juſt as the 'notion I had formed of the people in general 'might be, the government would not take the 'bait I had prepared for them, and treated me 'and my propoſals with equal contempt. This 'threw me into the neceſſity of proſtituting the

'abilities

'abilities, which I fondly hoped would have been 'employed in embroiling nations, to the decep- 'tion of individuals, for the ſupport of life; for 'all the wealth I was maſter of conſiſted ſolely in 'the projects of my brain.

'My ſucceſs in this under-plot made me ſome 'amends for the miſcarriage of the other. I no 'ſooner fixed my habitation, than I was crouded 'to by tradeſmen of all kinds, to ſollicit my cuſ- 'tom for things which I had not the leaſt proba- 'bility of being ever able to pay for. But that 'gave me no concern; I accepted their offers to 'ſuch an amount, that I was immediately able to 'procure conſiderable ſums of money for other 'occaſions, by the ſale of commodities which, ſo 'far from having occaſion for, I ſcarcely knew 'the uſe of.

'Fluſhed with this good fortune, I threw off 'all reſerve, and gave a looſe to every paſſion 'which luxury could raiſe in a temper naturally 'warm; never reflecting, that the day would ſoon 'come, when my inability to pay my preſent 'debts would not only put a ſtop to theſe artifi- 'cial reſources, but alſo probably plunge me 'in the horrours of a gaol for life. I profeſſed 'myſelf a man of pleaſure! I dreſſed, gamed, and 'intrigued with people of the firſt rank; and, 'for ſome time, was ſo intoxicated as to forget 'my purpoſe in coming over, and think I could 'ſupport this life for ever. Not that I was ever 'ſo intent upon my pleaſures as to miſs any 'opportunity of procuring the means, immedi- 'ately neceſſary to obtain them. On the con- 'trary, the moment I threw off my deſigns 'upon the government, I doubled my applica-

'tion

'tion to turn the follies of particulars to my own 'advantage, ſtopping at nothing, however iniqui-'tous in the opinion of the world, to accompliſh 'my deſigns.

'Such a life muſt neceſſarily involve me in 'a variety of adventures, many of which, it is 'true, I got not ſo ſmoothly over as I could 'wiſh; but I had learned philoſophy enough to 'take the bad with the good, without repi-'ning at what it was not in my power to re-'dreſs.

'It would be endleſs to enter into a particular 'detail of every thing I did and ſuffered in the 'courſe of this life; I ſhall, therefore, only juſt 'mention one or two affairs, which may ſerve to 'give you ſome notion of the reſt.

'As I particularly valued myſelf upon my li-'terary character, there was no kind of acquaint-'ance I was fonder of cultivating, than with men 'of letters; for which I had alſo a further mo-'tive, that, as their attention to books generally 'made them ſtrangers to the ways of men, they 'were moſt eaſy to be made the property of any 'mercenary deſigns.

'On both theſe accounts I had taken lodg-'ings in the houſe of a clergyman, who, beſides 'the character of a man of learning, was alſo 'reputed to be in good circumſtances. I ſoon 'found that he was a perſon exactly fitted for 'my deſigns, and therefore loſt no time in ma-'king a proper impreſſion on him. The firſt 'ſtep towards acquiring confidence is to place it 'yourſelf. I immediately made him my banker, 'lodging every ſum of money I won at play, or 'raiſed by the means I mentioned before, in his

'hands.

'hands. As my ſucceſs made theſe ſums very 'conſiderable at firſt, he conceived an opinion of 'my being a perſon of conſequence and fortune 'above my appearance. This inſpired him with 'ſuch reſpect for me, that if at any time I even 'hinted an occaſion for more than I had in his 'hands, he not only offered to ſupply me, but 'even looked upon my acceptance as an honour. 'To confirm him in this way of thinking, I fre-'quently accepted of his offers when I had no 'occaſion, only that the punctuality of my pay-'ment might make him ſtill the readier whenever 'I ſhould.

'Nor was it long before I was obliged to avail 'myſelf of this ſcheme. A bad run at play ſtrip-'ped me of all my money, and my tradeſmen 'brought in their bills, ſo that my former re-'ſources were at an end. In this difficulty I ap-'plied to my landlord, who readily ſupplied me 'with all the money in his poſſeſſion; and, that 'not being ſufficient, borrowed as much more as 'he could, till my remittances ſhould arrive from 'my eſtate.

'This ſupply might have extricated me from 'the difficulties of the preſent moment. But I 'was awoke from my golden dreams, and ſaw 'that this was the laſt money I could any ways 'expect to raiſe, as my practices began to be 'ſuſpected, and every body had taken the alarm 'againſt me; ſo that, if I parted with it, I 'ſhould only gain a momentary relief, as my 'landlord would ſoon expect to be paid alſo. I, 'therefore, reſolved to ſerve all my creditors 'alike, and go back to *Germany* with the mo-'ney in my poſſeſſion, leaving them to curſe

'their credulity, and be more cautious for the 'future.

'As I had ſtill a conſiderable quantity of valu-'able effects in my poſſeſſion, I knew it would 'be impoſſible to remove them without giving 'the alarm to my landlord, and I could not think 'of leaving them in his hands, though they were 'far ſhort of the debt I owed him. In this di-'lemma my ready genius prompted a ſcheme that 'would not only ſecure me from him, but alſo give 'me time to prepare for my decampment with 'more convenience. Upon my firſt coming to 'his houſe, I had contrived, by taking the im-'preſſions in wax, to get falſe keys to all his locks. 'This is a piece of precaution, which no man of 'prudence will ever neglect. In purſuance of my 'ſcheme, the morning after I received the money 'from him, and before I was to pay it away by 'appointment, I took the opportunity, while he 'was at church, to convey into his cloſet ſeveral 'things of value, my property in which I could 'clearly prove, taking away, at the ſame time, 'the obligations which I had given him for the 'money he had lent me, which his confidence in 'my honour had prevented his taking the precau-'tion of having witneſſes to.

'As ſoon as I had done this, I went directly 'to a magiſtrate, before whom I made oath of my 'being robbed of a large ſum of money and many 'of my moſt valuable effects, among which I 'particularly named the things I had left in his 'cloſet, and required an authority to apprehend 'my landlord, and ſearch his houſe, as I had rea-'ſon to ſuſpect that he had ſtolen them, having 'caught him often coming out of my apartments

'in

'in evident confuſion, and at times when my 'being abſent deprived him of every honeſt reaſon 'of going into them; and this charge I had con-'firmed by the teſtimony of my *valet de chambre*, 'and another perſon, whom I had prepared pro-'perly.

'Though the execution of ſentence is not 'quite ſo ſudden in *England* as in *Turkey*, an ac-'cuſation of this kind, however groundleſs, is, 'in many reſpects, not much leſs dreadful; the 'harpies of the law never loſing their hold of the 'accuſed, till they have devoured every thing in 'his poſſeſſion. The warrant I demanded was 'readily granted for this reaſon; and away I 'reſolutely went, in company with the officers, 'to execute it. We found my landlord, in the 'ſecurity of innocence, in his parlour, waiting 'for my coming in to dinner. It is impoſſible 'to expreſs his aſtoniſhment, when they laid 'hold of him like a thief, and told him it was 'on my accuſation. All the reſolution and pre-'ſence of mind I was maſter of were requiſite 'to bear me through the ſcene! At firſt he was 'unable to ſpeak a word, which the candour of 'his accuſers did not fail to conſtrue into a ſilent 'acknowledgement of his guilt; but, recovering 'himſelf in a few moments, he firſt raiſed his 'eyes to heaven, and then turning them upon 'me, gave me a look that almoſt froze the blood 'in my veins; but never deigned to ſpeak a word 'to me.

'He then addreſſed himſelf to the officers, and 'mildly deſired that they would execute their duty 'with lenity, nor offer any indignity to the ſa-'cred character he bore, till a proof of his guilt

'ſhould

'ſhould make him appear unworthy of the ſanc-
'tion of it.

'Such behaviour had an effect not to be deſcri-
'bed upon all that were preſent. The very offi-
'cers forgot their hardened nature for a moment,
'and the tear of pity fell from eyes that never
'wept before at human miſery. Even I began
'to feel the fooliſh infection, and was obliged to
'charm up other paſſions to prevent my betraying
'myſelf, though my ruin was at ſtake. Accord-
'ingly, I raiſed my voice, and, with a ſtern ac-
'cent, commanded the officers to do their duty,
'and ſearch the houſe, before his accomplices
'ſhould have time to convey away the things we
'came in queſt of. This word put an end to a
'compaſſion that was contrary to their nature,
'and they proceeded to their buſineſs with their
'uſual keenneſs; though ſtill with reſpect, till
'they came to ſearch his cloſet, where the ſight
'of things, which I had ſworn to have been ſtolen
'from me, appeared ſo plain a proof of his guilt,
'that they treated him with all the indignity of
'the vileſt malefactor.

'Secure in his innocence, he had hitherto pre-
'ſerved a ſteadineſs of temper that ſeemed ſupe-
'riour to the power of fortune; but at this ſight
'his reſolution failed him. He fell upon his knees,
'and raiſing his hands and eyes to heaven, Juſt
'God! (ſaid he) thy will be done! Thou knoweſt
'my innocence, and art able to defend me!——
'And wilt defend me (ſaid he, riſing, and reco-
'vering his former ſpirits.)

'In the mean time, I ſeemed encouraged, by
'this ſucceſs, to hope for the recovery of the
'money which I pretended to have loſt alſo,

'and

'and ceaſed not to urge the officers to make the 'ſtricteſt ſearch. But this was not neceſſary; 'they ranſacked every place, and toſſed about 'every thing that was too large for them to con-'vey away, till they made his whole houſe one 'ſcene of deſolation. They then dragged him 'before the magiſtrate, where the finding of the 'things gave ſuch weight to the charge which I 'poſitively ſwore againſt him, that he was on the 'verge of being hurried to priſon, and would cer-'tainly have ſuffered an ignominious death, had 'it not been for ſome unlucky prevarication in 'my *valet de chambre*'s evidence. This, with 'ſome ſuſpicions that were ſuggeſted againſt my 'own character, by the pawnbroker to whom I 'had ſold the goods I took up from my tradeſ-'men, and who unfortunately happened to be 'preſent, gave the affair ſuch a turn in his favour, 'that he was admitted to bail, till his innocence, 'or guilt, ſhould be proved by a publick tryal.

'But it was far from my intention to wait 'for this. The moment I left the magiſtrate, 'I went to the houſe of an acquaintance, whither 'I had ordered my effects to be removed before, 'where I reſolved to prepare for my departure 'with the utmoſt expedition. As to my credi-'tors, when they called upon me next morning, 'as I had appointed, for their money, I told 'them the ſtory of my having been robbed the 'day before by my landlord, and therefore that 'they muſt wait till I ſhould receive another re-'mittance from my own country; and though I 'ſaw that few of them believed me, or were in-'clined to grant me that indulgence, I was un-'der no concern, as the habitation of my friend

'was

'was in a place privileged from the immediate
'power of the law.

'However, it was impoſſible to be eaſy in ſuch
'a ſituation, where every eye that ſaw me re-
'proached me with what I had done! I, therefore,
'took the opportunity of going off, in which
'I was ſo ſucceſsful as to elude the vigilance of
'my purſuers, and eſcape to *Holland*, where I
'had the vexation to learn that half of my ſcheme
'was diſappointed, my landlord being diſcharged
'without tryal, for want of my appearing to pro-
'ſecute him. But, though he eſcaped death, his
'affairs were ſo effectually ruined by the loſs of
'the money he lent and had procured for me,
'and the expenſe and damage he ſuffered by my
'accuſation, that he was obliged to fly for refuge
'to the ſavages of *America*, from the power of his
'more ſavage creditors.

CHAP. XVIII.

Continued. He launches again into the troubled ocean of politicks, and ſuffers a ſecond ſhipwreck in ENGLAND. He that will not when he may, *&c.* ——— *It is often better to play a poor game than ſtand out.* CHRYSAL *arrives at* LISBON.

'I No ſooner arrived in *Holland*, the general
'rendezvous of politicians, than I reaſſumed
'that character once more, and that with ſuch
'ſucceſs, that the miniſter of a power in alliance
'with

'with *England* conceived ſuch an opinion of my 'abilities, as made him offer to recommend me to 'that court, for an employment of the higheſt 'conſequence in one of the principal courts of '*Germany*.

'Though I was ſenſible that my return to *Eng-* '*land* muſt be attended with diſagreeable, if not 'dangerous circumſtances, from the general pre- 'judices that were entertained there againſt me, I 'boldly reſolved to accept of his offer. The form- 'er, which could conſiſt only in impotent marks 'of diſlike, I diſregarded; and the latter I judged 'my recommendation would enable me to defeat. 'Accordingly I ſet out with the utmoſt privacy, 'and was ſafe in *London* before my leaving *Hol-* '*land* was even ſuſpected by thoſe who would 'have lain in wait for me.

'The very morning after my arrival I waited 'upon the miniſter to whom I was recommend- 'ed, with my letters, who received me very po- 'litely, and, upon the credit of the character gi- 'ven to him of me, entered into a familiar con- 'verſation on ſeveral ſubjects of intricacy and 'importance, in which I ſupported the character 'he had received of me ſo well, that he diſmiſſed 'me with an aſſurance of his protection and fa- 'vour.

'I now thought myſelf ſecure of my hopes: 'but the pleaſure of this thought was of a very 'ſhort continuance. The very next morning I 'received a meſſage from the miniſter to attend 'him directly, which, you may think, I obeyed 'in the higheſt ſpirits. Inſtead of the affability 'with which I expected to be received, upon my 'advancing to him, he darted a look at me, that

'ſeemed

'seemed designed to search my very soul. After 'viewing me steadily thus for some moments, 'You are recommended to me (said he) as a 'man of abilities, and such I have found you 'to be; but you have imposed upon the per- 'son who recommended you, and concealed 'your real character from him, or he would ne- 'ver have entertained so favourable an opinion 'of such an abandoned wretch!——But I 'have unravelled the mystery of your iniquities, 'and am guarded against your wiles.——Your 'crimes call loud for vengeance, and the stroke 'of fate hangs over your head. But, in hopes 'you may repent and amend your life, and in 'respect to the recommendation you brought (of 'which I cannot give you a stronger testimony 'than this) I will give you an opportunity to 'escape, for this time, the ruin that threatens 'you. Fly this country directly! If you are 'found in this city an hour hence, or make the 'least delay in any part of the kingdom (and 'all your steps are watched) you are to expect no 'favour or protection. And, that you should not 'plead inability to obey this injunction, take this 'purse of gold, and let me never see your face 'more.'

'I need not tell you the effect this speech had 'upon me. I took the purse, and retired, with- 'out making any reply; nor did I close my eyes 'in sleep, till I had bade adieu to that inhospitable 'shore.

'On my return, I went to wait upon my for- 'mer patron, but was denied admission, and or- 'dered never to go there any more; the account 'of my disgrace in *England* having, as I learned

'after-

'afterwards, been tranſmitted to him in the very 'ſhip that brought me over.

'Though theſe miſcarriages mortified my pride, 'they did not deject my ſpirit. The gold given 'me by the *Engliſh* miniſter enabled me to ſup- 'port myſelf in a ſtate of independence for 'ſome time; during which, I ſucceſſively offered 'to accept every propoſal that I had formerly re- 'jected; but I had miſſed my opportunity, and 'was now rejected myſelf in my turn. At length, 'when I was almoſt reduced to deſpair, the em- 'ployment I hold here was offered to me, which, 'though far beneath my former hopes, I thought 'it not prudent to refuſe, eſpecially as it opened 'me an opportunity of venting my rage with 'impunity upon all who had ever offended me. 'I am literally hired to wage open war with truth, 'honour, and juſtice, by inventing falſe news, 'to ſupport the exhauſted ſpirits of the people; '——by defaming the enemies of my employers, 'to give a colour to the iniquitous deſigns of the 'latter; and by varniſhing over the moſt flagrant 'acts of oppreſſion, cruelty, and deceit, with the 'ſpecious colours of authority, juſtice, and re- 'ligion.

'To a man who retained any of the prejudices 'of the world, and did not examine things in the 'ſimplicity of nature, ſuch a taſk muſt be moſt 'diſagreeable. But to me all things are indif- 'ferent, as I know all things are alike.'

Here my maſter's friend concluded his hiſtory; the enormity of which would prevent its obtaining credit, had it been related by any body but himſelf; though, as I told you before, I have omitted the blackeſt particulars, and ſoftened the colours of the reſt.

In

In a few days after this interview my maſter left *Bruſſels*, and proceeded on his journey to *Liſbon*; during the remainder of which, nothing occurred worth relating.

CHAP. XIX.

CHRYSAL comes, at LISBON, into the poſſeſſion of a former acquaintance. His maſter makes the great attempt without ſucceſs. Several of the nobility are ſacrificed to other motives, on pretence of being guilty of this fact. CHRYSAL's maſter is at length taken up, and he changes his ſervice.

IF I was formerly ſurpriſed at meeting a *Peruvian* acquaintance at *Vienna*, I was no leſs ſo, when I found that the perſon to whom he ſent me in *Liſbon*, was the very captain, of whoſe miraculous converſation, after the rape and murther of his brother's wife, I gave you an account in the beginning of this relation, whom I found to be a man choſen for *the great attempt*; the proof of which he had given of his capacity in that affair having raiſed their opinion of him ſo high, as to make them think him the only proper perſon for this.

I did not remain long in a ſtate of ſpeculation in the poſſeſſion of this maſter; the orders, which were brought along with *me*, were all that was waited for, to accelerate the execution of *the* deſign. Accordingly, the blow was ſtruck a few nights after; but, in the confuſion inſeparable from ſuch attempts, without effect.

The

The king was ſhot in his coach, as he returned one night from a love aſſignation, at ſome diſtance from his palace, by my maſter, who had way-laid him at a proper place, and fired a blunderbuſs, loaded with ſmall balls, at him, through the back of the coach.

By an inſtantaneous ſtupefaction of fear, which is often taken for reſolution, and preſence of mind, the king fell down in the coach, and ſpoke not a word; which made my maſter conclude the work done, and ſo prevented a repetition of the blow.

But what was his confuſion the next morning, when he found that the king, though ſeverely wounded, was likely to recover! The opportunity was loſt, nor was it probable, that another ſhould offer, till it would be too late. However, he attended the event, ſo far ſafe, that no one could endanger his ſafety by betraying him, there being no perſon there, not even of the order, privy to the action: for ſecrets of this importance are always entruſted to as few as poſſible.

While he thus calmly looked on as an unconcerned ſpectator, it is impoſſible to deſcribe the diſtraction that reigned all over the city, where every perſon ſuſpected his neighbour, and was almoſt afraid to converſe with his brother, for fear of being ſuſpected of a participation in a crime, of which he knew not the perſon guilty.

At court, in the mean time, the moſt myſterious ſilence was obſerved, and all converſation on the ſubject diſcouraged. This was thought to be the moſt probable way of coming to the knowledge of ſo dark an affair; as their ſpies could thereby mix with the people with leſs ſuſpicion, and make their obſervations with the

greater certainty, when they ſhould be off their guard.

Not that they were at a loſs to think from whence the blow had come: but by whom it was ſtruck was the difficulty to find out, that ſo they might found their proceedings on an evidence of juſtice, for the Jeſuits were too mighty a body to be attacked upon an uncertainty.

The reaſon for ſuſpecting them of this fact was, that, upon the miſcarriage of their premature attempt in *America*, the king was ſo incenſed againſt the whole ſociety, that he diſmiſſed them from the direction of his conſcience, and every other place and employment about his perſon and court.

Such an indignity he was ſenſible muſt alarm the reſentment of a ſet of men not remarkable for patience, or forgiving affronts; he had, therefore, taken every precaution to guard againſt them, as far as human prudence could direct his fears, which was only againſt diſturbances in the ſtate, for of ſuch an attempt as this he could not ſuſpect them.

While things hung in this ſuſpence, I had an opportunity of ſeeing into the character of the people I was among; but human language wants force to deſcribe them.

I have already given you the genuine character of the *Dutch*; to that let us add poverty, pride, ſuperſtition, bigotry, and its inſeparable attendant, cruelty, and they will give you ſome idea of the preſent *Portugueſe*. A people of whom it is hard to ſay, whether to abſtracted ſpeculation they are more ridiculous or execrable, the ſtruggle between their follies and vices is ſo unremitted and ſo ſtrong.

A little

A little before I arrived there, the city had been reduced to aſhes by lightening; and, before they had recovered from the conſternation which ſuch a misfortune threw them into, they received an account of the capital of their *American* dominions being ſwallowed by an earthquake.

Such ſignal inſtances of the wrath of Heaven might have been expected to alarm their conſciences to look for the cauſes of it in their vices, and to try to avert it by repentance and amendment. But, inſtead of that, the firſt proof they gave of coming to their reaſon (or, I ſhould rather ſay, of coming to themſelves, for reaſon it was not) after their fright, was, to attribute theſe misfortunes to a relaxation in ſuperſtitious ſeverity, and to demand, as victims to it, the only people, under heaven, whoſe good nature had given effectual relief to their diſtreſs.

At length, after a calm ſo long, that people began to think the ſtorm was quite allayed, it broke out with a fury, that amazed not only the unhappy heads on which it burſt, but alſo the whole nation beſide.

I told you, that the attempt had been made upon the king, as he was returning from a love-meeting. The perſon with whom he had been was deſcended from the firſt, and related or allied to all the greateſt families in his kingdom.

In a country, whoſe characteriſtics are pride and revenge, ſuch an intercourſe muſt be dangerous even to royalty, as the honour of all thoſe families ſeemed to be wounded through her. Accordingly, a rumour of her being with child having extorted ſome inadvertent, illative, general menaces from ſome of her relations, as the fact was really ſo, the conſcious apprehenſions of the king

were alarmed; and, as he could not declare the true reaſon of them, he made a pretence of the aſſaſſination; the charge of which received ſome appearance of probability, from the very circumſtance which now occaſioned its being brought againſt them, it being known that he was returning from that lady, at the very time when the attempt was made upon him.

Thus, to the fear of danger ariſing from a real crime were the greateſt ſubjects in the kingdom to be ſacrificed, on a pretence of guilt, which their very accuſers believed them innocent of. For, before they were apprehended, their ruin was reſolved on, which was not a little forwarded by the opportunity which it gave the king, of ſeiſing all their vaſt poſſeſſions, and thereby repairing the loſſes he had ſuffered in the late calamities.

Accordingly, after ſuffering every torture which human ingenuity could invent, to make them confeſs a guilt of which they were not even ſuſpected, they were publickly executed in the moſt ignominious and cruel manner, in the ſight of an aſtoniſhed people, without any proof being given of their guilt, beſide the bare affirmations and ſtrained inferences of thoſe who were both accuſers and judges, and alſo reaped the profits of their ruin.

Such ſcenes as theſe are too horrid to be dwelt on: I ſhall, therefore, return to my maſter, with whom I had an opportunity of coming to the knowledge of every tranſaction relative to this myſterious affair, the miſcarriage of his attempt having made it unneceſſary for him to diſburſe the money among which I came to him, and by

by that means continued me so long in his possession.

Could any thing have heightened the opinion my first knowledge of him gave me, it must have been to see him an unconcerned spectator of the sufferings of those unhappy victims to his guilt, and to hear him argue for the justice of their punishment.

But his triumph was not long; secret and inscrutable as the Jesuits imagined they had laid their schemes, the king either received, or pretended to have received, such information of them as, confirmed by a multitude of facts not to be denied, gave an appearance of probability and justice to their being charged as accomplices with the unhappy nobles, and treated with the utmost severity. A step that could not have been taken on such grounds, while these nobles were alive and at liberty, or the people in spirits to exert the influence of their prejudices in their behalf. But the favourable minute was come to strike at the root of ecclesiastical tyranny, and deliver both king and people from a yoke, under which they had so long blindly groaned, that, at length, they thought it just and natural.

Accordingly, in the midst of his security my master was seised, and hurried away to a prison, with the rest of his brethren; and all his papers and effects secured for the government. Of the former they could make but little use, as it is an invariable rule with all the *order*, never to keep any by them, whose discovery may endanger them, or their designs; but the latter were turned to ready account.

In this dissipation I fell to the lot of one of the officers, who, in his search, took an opportunity

to ſecrete the bag in which I was, and that very night lodged his acquiſition with a banker, for fear of detection.

CHAP. XX.

CHRYSAL *meets another acquaintance at his new maſter's. Concluſion of the hiſtory of honeſt* AMINADAB. *Adventures of his ſon. He enters into buſineſs at* LISBON, *in which* CHRYSAL *ſuffers a great misfortune. His ingratitude to his uncle juſtly rewarded.* CHRYSAL *enters into a new ſervice.*

I Was ſcarce ſettled in the poſſeſſion of my new maſter, whom I found to be a concealed Jew, when I ſaw a perſon enter his compting-houſe, the ſight of whom made me almoſt diſtruſt my ſenſes. Nor was the ſurpriſe of my maſter leſs: 'O! God of *Abraham* (ſaid he) is not this the 'ſon of my brother *Aminadab?* Where haſt thou 'been? And where is thy father? He has been 'ſought from *Dan* to *Beerſheba!* His ſpoiling that 'Gentile, that *Egyptian* woman, has been a joy 'to all the brethren! but I am amazed to ſee thee 'here: I hope he is ſafe out of the reach of every 'Chriſtian power.'

'O! brother of my father (replied the ſon of '*Aminadab*) mention not that unhappy affair, 'if thou haſt not a mind to kill thy wretched 'nephew with grief. My father is dead!'—— 'But where is the wealth, nephew (interrupted

'my

'my maſter haſtily) where is the wealth?'——
'All loſt! all buried with him in the bottom of
'the ocean!' (replied the nephew.)—'*All loſt!*
'*The wealth all loſt! O my brother! O Aminadab,*
'*my brother! my brother! Since the deſtruction of*
'*Jeruſalem, there fell not ſuch a misfortune on our*
'*tribe! the wealth all loſt! O Aminadab, my bro-*
'*ther! my brother!*'—'Alas, my father, I faint
'through wearineſs, weakneſs, and hunger; I
'have not eaten bread this day; let us retire into
'the inner chamber, and when my ſoul is refreſh-
'ed with a morſel of bread, and a drop of water,
'I will put aſhes on my head, and ungird my
'loins, and then unfold the whole unhappy ſtory
'to thee.'

The repaſt was literally what he had aſked; and, as ſoon as it was ended, and the young *Aminadab* and his uncle ſeated on the floor together, in the poſture of mourning, the former proceeded thus:

'By the letters which my father wrote to thee
'from *England*, in the ſacred cypher of our fa-
'mily, thou wer't informed of his intended return
'into his native land of *Africa*, and invited to
'meet him at *Tetuan*, and ſhare in his fortune.
'This he told me while we were upon our voy-
'age; but thy better angel prevented thee, and
'ſaved thee the labour and loſs of ſuch a journey
'in vain.

'The ſhip, on board which we unfortunately
'embarked, was a *Dutchman*, bound for the coaſt
'of *Italy*, but was to land us at *Gibraltar*, from
'whence we knew we could get an immediate
'paſſage over. But, behold, when we were juſt
'in view of the port; when the ſight of his na-
'tive land made the ſoul of my father rejoice,

'and we thought of nothing but ſafety and con-
'tent, a *Sallee* rover gave chaſe to our ſhip. The
'*Dutch* captain immediately crouded all the ſail he
'could to eſcape; but, the wind dying away, and
'the pirate gaining upon us with his oars, he came
'to my father with tears in his eyes, and told him
'that we were all ruined, for he had neglected to
'bring a paſs.

'This news was like a clap of thunder to my
'father, who too well knew the conſequence of
'their finding ſuch a maſs of wealth in his poſ-
'ſeſſion! '*Wretch that I am* (exclaimed he) *why*
'*did I venture with one of thy ſordid nation? ſlaves*
'*to* MAMMON, *who would hazard liberty and for-*
'*tune to ſave ſuch a triſle.*' Then turning about,
'and going into his cabbin, he ſtood ſome mo-
'ments, as if loſt in thought, when burſting into
'an extatick rage, he ſnatched up the coffer, in
'which his gold and jewels were, from under the
'head of his bed, and embracing it eagerly, *I have*
'*gained thee* (ſaid he) *I have earned thee with an-*
'*xiety and toil; and I will not loſe thee now!*——
'*O Jonas, ſend thy whale to receive me, and bear*
'*me to the land of my fathers. I will not be a*
'*laughing-ſtock to the Gentiles, nor a by-word in my*
'*father's houſe.*'—Saying which words he ruſh-
'ed upon the deck, and, before any perſon could
'poſſibly prevent him, he plunged into the ſea,
'with the coffer in his arms, and was never ſeen
'more.

'While we ſtood amazed at his raſhneſs, the
'heavens, as if appeaſed with the ſacrifice, im-
'mediately ſent a wind, that filled our fluttering
'ſails, and ſoon bore the ſhip, delivered thus of
'its *Jonas*, out of the reach of the enemies.
'You may better conceive than I can deſcribe

'the

'the ſituation I was in at this event: I proſtrated 'myſelf on the ſhore, when we landed at *Gibral-* 'tar, and bewailed my misfortune with tears and 'lamentations. But this afforded no relief to my 'diſtreſs, and ſomething I muſt do to earn a 'morſel of bread. I, therefore, ſold all my ſuper- 'fluous raiment for four ducats, for all our money 'was in the coffer, and with theſe did I purchaſe 'ſome eggs and fruits. which I ſold again in the 'garriſon, to ſupport my life, till I ſhould have 'an opportunity of coming to thee, my father, 'for advice and aſſiſtance in this diſtreſs; and 'now behold theſe four ducats are become twelve 'ducats in my hands, and that is all my worldly 'wealth.'

The uncle covered his face with his hands, and remained ſilent ſome time. At length he ſpoke to his nephew in theſe words: 'It is in 'vain, O ſon of my brother, to mourn for what 'is not to be remedied; holy *David* wept no 'longer for his child after he was dead: let us, 'therefore ariſe and think of ſomething that may, 'if not retrieve thy mighty loſs, at leaſt admini- 'ſter relief to thy diſtreſs. Thou haſt been initi- 'ated in the myſterious art of leſſening the weight, 'without defacing the image, on the golden coins 'of theſe idolaters. This was the firſt riſe of 'thy father, who began the world as poor as thou 'art now, till his unwearied induſtry in this prac- 'tice raiſed him from want. Follow thou, there- 'fore, his example; and may the God of thy fa- 'thers give thee the ſame ſucceſs, but with an 'happier bleſſing than he found.

'And lo! fortunately it has happened, that I 'have this very hour received a large quantity of

'the coin of *Britain*, all new from the mint. 'On that; therefore, thou mayeſt begin thine endeavours, and the fourth part of the produce of 'this labour ſhall be thine: I was juſt going to 'have ſent for another, who always works for 'me, for a fifth; but I am willing to give thee a 'profit extraordinary, to encourage thee.

'Thine earnings in this buſineſs will ſoon produce thee a conſiderable ſum, with which thou 'mayeſt go privately to *London*, and purchaſe old 'clothes, which will bring great profit in *Germany*, as ſoon as this war ſhall be at an end.

'Till thou art able to provide for thyſelf, thou 'mayeſt eat bread here, and ſleep under the ſhadow of my roof: be not dejected; *honeſt* induſtry never fails of ſucceſs.'

The young *Aminadab* was no ſooner introduced thus into a way of *honeſt* induſtry, than he ſeemed to forget his loſs, and ſettled himſelf moſt intently to work. *I* fell one of the firſt ſacrifices to his arts, which deprived me of a fourth part of my weight, and of all my beauty; nor did my companions fare much better; ſo that from a thouſand of us who were in the bag, his ſhare of the ſpoil was a treaſure, on which he immediately commenced merchant, ſtocking a box with all the gaudy trinkets that could allure the ignorant, and give him an opportunity of exerting his talents of impoſition.

You have often heard me mention the beauty of my figure with pleaſure; but, alas, vain boaſt, it was now no more! I came from this fiery tryal with all the marks of age and infirmity ſo ſtrong upon me, that I could not forbear comparing myſelf and my companions to a number of *Britiſh* ſoldiers,

ſoldiers, juſt come from *Soup Maigre* and ſtraw, in a *French* priſon.——In this mutilated condition I was made up in a parcel, to be ſent to *England*, againſt whom this trade was moſtly carried on, there being no other nation who would receive their own coin, under the diſgrace of ſuch diminiſhing. But, before I could be ſent off, an accident happened in the family of my maſter, the banker, which gave me a longer delay in *Liſbon*.

I have told you that in ſecret he was a Jew, though the proſpect of gain made him profeſs Chriſtianity, in deſpite of the horrours of the Inquiſition. But, happy had it been for him that he had not made ſuch profeſſion, or that his nephew had been drowned with his father.

For no ſooner had his gains, in his art of diminiſhing, reſtored him a little to his ſpirits, than thinking his portion of that profit too little, and inſufficient beſides to raiſe him to opulence ſo ſuddenly as he deſired, he caſt about how to acquire the whole, or at leaſt a large part of his uncle's wealth, at once.

He, therefore, took a proper place to work in, for his merchandiſe did not interrupt him in his main buſineſs, at ſome diſtance from his uncle's houſe; and, having conveyed a large ſum of money thither to work upon, he directly informed the *holy office* of his uncle's *Judaiſm*, with directions how to detect him in it, concluding, that when he ſhould be ſeiſed, there would be no enquiry made after the money that was in his own hands, as he knew it was impoſſible he ſhould ever eſcape from thence. And though this was but a poor pittance, in compariſon of the ſums which he knew would be forfeited, yet he com-

forted himſelf with the thought that it was more than he could any other way hope to obtain from him.

But he was deceived by his avarice, and juſtly involved in the ruin which he drew upon his benefactor. For when the officers of the Inquiſition took poſſeſſion of his uncle's effects, finding an entry in his books of the money in *his* hands, they went directly in queſt of it, and that ſo unexpectedly, that they caught him at *his work*, beyond a poſſibility of evaſion or eſcape.

This is a crime never forgiven in any ſtate. He was, therefore, immediately delivered up to the civil power, from which he received a death not leſs cruel than that of his uncle from the Inquiſition.

Of all the human ſufferings I had yet ſeen, except in the caſe of the *ſacrifices*, this gave me the greateſt pleaſure, as there is no crime that can deform the heart of man more than ingratitude.

I here changed my ſervice of courſe, and entered into that of the *holy office*, to the judge of which I was delivered the day I was taken out of the poſſeſſion of the unfortunate Jew.——I have before given you my ſentiments on the abſurdity of thinking to pleaſe the Deity, by cruelty to his creatures, in the inſtance of the *human paſſover* of the Jews. The ſame arguments will hold here; and with this additional force, that cruelty of every kind is, if poſſible, more abſurd under the Chriſtian diſpenſation than any other, as, beſide the general laws of nature and reaſon, the particular laws of Chriſtianity do every-where clearly and expreſsly command brotherly love, tenderneſs, and compaſſion, forbidding every appear-

ance

ance of cruelty, under the ſevereſt denunciations of wrath.

But there has been ſo much, and that ſo well ſaid, on this ſubject already; and the nature of the ſufferings of thoſe unhappy wretches who are brought before this tribunal is ſo well known, that I ſhall ſpare myſelf the pain of the repetition, and only mention one affair, the circumſtances of which appeared ſingularly affecting to me.

CHAP. XXI.

An uncommon criminal appears at the tribunal of the holy office. A love-ſcene in a ſtrange place. The hiſtory of PHERON *and* ILISSA.

THE next day after I came into the poſſeſſion of the inquiſitor, there appeared at his tribunal a perſon of a moſt auguſt preſence, though overcaſt with all the melancholy which his unhappy ſituation could inſpire. He ſeemed to be advanced in years, but not paſt the vigour of life, and was diſtinguiſhed from the national look of the *Portugueſe*, by an uncommon turn of feature, which ſhowed him of another people.

As ſoon as he was brought to the place appointed for him, the inquiſitor, with an aweful ſolemnity in his voice and manner, addreſſed him thus: 'Thou art once more brought to this tribunal, to try if the ſtubbornneſs of thine heart has yet relented, and thou wilt confeſs thy guilt.'——'I told thee before, O judge of the faith

'faith of Chriſtians! (replied the priſoner, with 'a compoſed look and determined voice) I told 'thee before, and I repeat it again, that I am 'not conſcious of any thing that ſhould incur 'the cenſure of this tribunal: nor ſhall all the 'tortures which the inventive cruelty of man can 'inflict upon this wretched body make me lie 'againſt mine immortal ſoul, or acknowledge 'guilt to which I am a ſtranger. But tell me of 'what I am accuſed, and my conſcience ſhall 'direct my lips to anſwer thee the truth. Perhaps 'I may unwittingly have erred; thou knoweſt 'that I have not always profeſſed the Chriſtian 'faith, according to the laws eſtabliſhed here: 'pardon, then, the errors of mine ignorance, and 'inſtruct me to avoid the like for the future. 'And, O! I adjure thee, by thy Chriſtian faith, 'to relieve my heart from the anxiety that tears 'it, for the fate of my daughter! O! let me 'know'——

His adjuration was broken off at theſe words by the officers of the court; and, his anſwer not being ſatisfactory, he was remanded back to priſon, without any further queſtions, with the ſtrongeſt menaces of ſeverity; though, in ſecret, the judge ordered him to be treated with tenderneſs and reſpect, and ſupplied with every comfort and convenience of life, that could mitigate the horrours of a priſon.

My maſter then withdrew, and, changing his judicial robes for a more convenient and ſplendid dreſs, retired to his own apartments, where, after the reſpectful ceremony of ſending to deſire admiſſion, he went into a particular chamber, in which was a young female, whom he approached with all the timid tenderneſs of love. 'I have

'ſeen

'seen thy father, my deareſt *Iliſſa* (ſaid he) and 'he is well; nor ſhall any human means be want-'ing to preſerve him ſo.'

'Why, then, may I not ſee him? (replied the 'lady.) How can I truſt thy words, who haſt al-'ready deceived me?'——'Thou knoweſt, my 'love (returned he) that thy requeſt is impoſ-'ſible; and if I have deceived thee, by pro-'miſing compliance with it, it was only to calm 'the tranſports of thy paſſion, that in a cooler 'moment thou mighteſt hearken to the voice of 'love and happineſs.'—'*Mention not happineſs to 'me in this place! Can happineſs be without li-'berty? Is a priſon the proper ſcene for love? But 'I will be deceived no longer! I will ſee my father, 'or I will not live. Grant me this requeſt, and ex-'pect my gratitude. Thou knoweſt that for myſelf 'I fear not thy power! Thou knoweſt that immediate 'death is ever in my reach. Trifle not, therefore, with 'me any longer; reſtore me to my father; reſtore us 'both to liberty; and then, then only, ſpeak to me 'of love.*'——'Thou haſt conquered, my *Iliſſa*, 'thou haſt conquered! Your father ſhall be re-'ſtored to you; and we will all fly together to thy 'native land, where we ſhall live in happineſs: 'but this cannot be compaſſed on a ſudden; it 'will require both time and addreſs to ſecure our 'retreat. But when I have done this for my '*Iliſſa*, can I be ſure of her love? Will her 'heart return the ſacrifice I make?'——'*I have 'told thee that my heart is grateful; I tell thee now 'it is not inſenſible to ſofter paſſions. Urge me no 'further. When I am freed from this priſon, and 'my father is preſent to give the ſanction of his au-'thority to my actions, I promiſe thee to become thy 'wife.*

'*wife.*——*And my inclination, which has never yet contradicted my duty, will not find it difficult to pay the love I promise at the altar.*'

These words raised my master's heart into an extasy; he prostrated himself at her feet, he kissed her hand, and swore eternal love.

The rest of the day was spent in forming schemes for their escape, and planning scenes of future happiness; in the prospect of which, their unequal years seemed to raise no cloud. The lady appeared to be about eighteen: her beauty, though very great, was rather majestick than soft; different from the *Bohemian* lady I mentioned before, an air of grandeur kept every one around her at an aweful distance, and the flash of her eye, like lightening, terrified the heart it warmed. Her lover was just past his meridian, but still in all the vigour of his life, and far from disagreeable in his appearance or conversation.

There was something so extraordinary in this affair, that it raised my strongest curiosity to know the circumstances of it; nor was I long at a loss. In the happiness of his heart that evening, my master presented a jewel of immense value to the lady, from whom, in the way of gallantry, he asked a tablet, cased with gold, as a return.

The lady refused not his request, but, at giving it, desired that he would be careful of it, as she esteemed it much beyond its apparent value, it having been given her by her father.

The moment I heard her say this, and saw him put the tablet in his pocket, I knew my curiosity would be gratified by the *spirit of the golden case.* As soon, therefore, as my master retired to rest, I entered directly into his heart, and, summon-

ſummoning, by our ſympathetick impulſe, the ſpirit I wanted, I *ſhowed* him my curioſity, which he complied with, by a *look* which ſignified theſe words:—'There is ſomething ſo extraordinary in 'the whole hiſtory of the perſons who have raiſed 'your curioſity, that it will be neceſſary to trace 'it from the beginning, to give you the ſatisfac-'tion you deſire.

'The father of the young lady, who gave me 'to our maſter, is the perſon whom you ſaw this 'morning at his tribunal. His name, in his own 'country, was *Pheron*; he is a native of *Abyſſinia*, 'where his anceſtors have poſſeſſed ample terri-'tories for many ages, being deſcended from the 'race of their kings.

'From the firſt dawn of reaſon in the mind 'of *Pheron*, he ſhowed the ſtrongeſt deſire for 'knowledge, and the ſteadieſt attachment to vir-'tue. The advances of human knowledge have 'not been ſo great in thoſe countries as here; yet 'natural reaſon has been able to diſcover the ſub-'lime truths of morality, the practice of which 'is called wiſdom, and the time conſumed here 'in fruitleſs ſpeculation devoted to it; by which 'means, if men are not ſo knowing, they are 'certainly more wiſe.———In this happy em-'ployment paſſed the firſt years of the youth of '*Pheron*, till, riper manhood calling him to the 'ſervice of his country, he went, at the head of 'his father's vaſſals, to repel the invaſions of the '*Ethiopians*.

'His ſucceſs was ſo great in this firſt eſſay of 'his arms, that he not only repelled the invaders, 'but alſo carried the war into their own country, 'where, after many victories, he compelled them 'to ſue for peace.

'The

'The fame of his actions ſoon reached the ear 'of his ſovereign, who ſent for him to his court, 'and rewarded his ſervices, by giving him his 'ſiſter in marriage. Dignities, in thoſe countries, 'are not proſtituted to the ſupport of luxury and 'idleneſs. *Pheron* returned home with his bride, 'to govern and protect his people, who, ſafe in 'his care, purſued their uſual occupations; war 'not being there made a conſtant profeſſion, nor 'the gratification of the worſt paſſions of human 'nature reduced into a ſcience, and practiſed by 'rule.

'The peace which *Pheron* had made was not 'injurious to his enemies, and therefore was pre-'ſerved by them, which gave him leiſure to at-'tend to the improvement of his country, and 'inſtruction of his people.

'He had lived in this happy ſtate ſome years, 'when there arrived a perſon in his country, who 'gave an unexpected turn to his affairs. The 'ſituation of thoſe nations is ſuch, that the inha-'bitants themſelves rarely ever travel; nor is the 'face of a ſtranger ſeen in an age among them. 'This made the arrival of this man the more 'taken notice of; he was immediately introduced 'to *Pheron*, to whoſe friendſhip his knowledge in 'ſeveral branches of ſcience ſoon recommended 'him.

'When the ſtranger had thus eſtabliſhed an 'intereſt with him, he at length diſcloſed to him 'the motive of his coming into a country ſo re-'mote from his own; he told him that he had 'undertaken this hazardous and painful journey 'in pure obedience to the divine command of 'inſtructing the ignorant in the knowledge of 'ſalvation. He *explained* to him the *myſteries*

'of

'of the Chriſtian religion; the *hierarchy* of *Rome*; 'the *divine* foundation of its power; and the 'ſeveral orders in its government, in ſo for- 'cible a manner, that he ſoon made a convert of 'him.

'*Pheron had always adored the name of Chriſt, 'but never till now knew what it was to be a Chri- 'ſtian.* One only book of his Goſpel had he ever 'ſeen, and from that he could underſtand no 'more, than that *faith in the death of Chriſt 'for the redemption of mankind, in obedience to the 'ſelf-evident laws of morality, with the pious wor- 'ſhip of the one* GOD *alone, was the whole reli- 'gion taught by him.*——It is not ſtrange, there- 'fore, if the glorious fabrick of the church, as 'repreſented by this Jeſuit, for ſuch he was, had 'all the effect he could deſire upon him, the na- 'turally inquiſitive turn of his mind making him 'liſten with eagerneſs to every thing which ſeem- 'ed to open a new proſpect to it.———Nor was 'he content with his own knowing theſe ſublime 'doctrines; he alſo inſtructed his wife, whom 'he tenderly loved, and their example convert- 'ed the greateſt part of his people; for nothing 'could prevail upon him to attempt forcing their 'aſſent.——But this did not ſatisfy him; the 'deſcriptions which he had heard of the learn- 'ing, piety, and glory of *Rome*, had filled his ſoul 'with an ardent deſire to ſee that metropolis of 'the world, that he might learn its virtues, and 'tranſplant them into his own country. He com- 'municated this thought to his inſtructor, who, 'fired with the glory of ſuch a proſelyte, en- 'couraged him in it by every argument he could 'uſe.——This determined his reſolution to make 'an attempt, the hazards of which would be re-

'warded

'warded with such happy consequences. He, 'therefore, prepared all things for his journey, in 'which his wife would bear him company, and 'also bring her only child, the lady whom you 'saw to-day, to receive the benediction of his '*Holiness*; and, committing the government of 'his people to his brother, and taking jewels and 'gold to an immense value, to defray the expenses 'of his journey, he set out with a company suf-'ficient to protect him from the dangers of tra-'velling through such inhospitable countries, 'and arrived without any accident at the *Red* '*Sea*, where he embarked on board a ship for '*Alexandria*.

'While he waited here for a ship bound to '*Italy*, the plague deprived him of his instructor 'and his wife. He was at first inconsolable for 'his loss; but virtue soon awoke reason to his 'guard, and his care for his daughter made him 'careful of himself.—His attendants would have 'persuaded him to return directly home, as he had 'lost his guide; but the loss of his wife made the 'thought of home a torture to him. He, there-'fore, sent them back, and resolved to settle his 'daughter in a convent, and enter into the mo-'nastick life himself at *Rome*.

'With this design he embarked in the first 'ship that sailed for *Europe*, not being able to 'bear the sight of a place which had been so fa-'tal to him. The ship was bound to this place, 'but, for a large sum of money, the commander 'engaged to land him at *Legharn*; but, happen-'ing to come to the knowledge of his wealth on 'the passage, he brought him directly hither, where 'he was no sooner landed, than he informed the 'inquisitor, who is his brother, who immediately

'seised

'seised both *Pheron* and his daughter, *for errors* 'in their opinions, and confined them in the pri-'sons of the *holy office*, where they have now been 'above a year.

'The first motive of this outrage was the 'stranger's wealth, an unpardonable crime in that 'court, and which would soon have brought them 'to an unhappy death. But the beauty of the 'daughter has hitherto deferred their fate, and, 'by what you have overheard to-day, may pro-'bably prevent it entirely.'

CHAP. XXII.

The love-adventure continued. The inquisitor visits PHERON, *and obtains his consent. He employs an* ENGLISH *sailor, whom he sets at liberty, to assist him in his designs.*

THE inquisitor's heart was too full of love to let him sleep long; he arose about midnight, and taking the keys of the prison, which were every night deposited with him, he went directly to visit the father of *Iliſſa*.

He found him wrapped in so profound a sleep, that his approach did not awake him; a sight so unusual in those mansions of despair astonished him; he paused a moment in admiration, gazing at him, to try if he could trace that virtue in his face, which made his heart superiour to such terrours.

Just then a smile of indignation flashed over the face of *Pheron*; and, in the illusion of imagination,

gination, he cried out, 'It is in vain! My con-
'ſcience is ſecure, and I deſpiſe your tortures.'—
As he ſaid theſe words, the working of his mind
awoke him, when, ſeeing my maſter ſtanding at
the ſide of his bed, the ſcene ſeemed to him, in his
ſurpriſe, to be continued; and he proceeded thus:
'I have told thee, that thy tortures ſhould not
'bend my ſoul to falſehood, and now thou ſhalt
'find it ſo.'

'O father of *Iliſſa!* (returned my maſter,
'melted into tenderneſs at ſuch a ſight) I come
'not to give thee torture! I bring the balm of
'comfort to thy ſoul!'—'*Art thou not the inqui-*
'*ſitor?*'—'I am, O *Pheron!* and thy friend.'—
'*Am I awake? Is this, or was the former, but a*
'*dream? Guard me, good Heaven! Let me not fall*
'*from virtue!*'—'Such virtue ever is the care of
'Heaven! *Pheron*, behold thy friend! the pro-
'ſelyte of thy virtues.———The time admits not
'many words; I come to offer thee liberty, and
'concert with thee the methods for our obtaining
'happineſs. Thy *Iliſſa'* ——'*Heaven guard my*
'*child!*'———'Thy *Iliſſa* is well, and happy in
'her father's welfare!'—'*O my child! my child!*
'*But ſhall I ever ſee her again?*'——'You ſhall;
'ſhe ſhall be reſtored to your boſom, and never
'torn from it more.'———'*Good gracious judge!*
'*O! when? O! how?—My child! my child!*'
'—Suppreſs your joy a moment; the beauties
'of *Iliſſa* have triumphed over the malice of her
'fate! She has found a lover, who offers happineſs
'to her and you.'—'*Does my child love him? Is*
'*he an honeſt man?*'—'His life will prove him
'ſuch! He offers to reſtore you and your *Iliſſa* to
'liberty, and to accompany you both to your na-
'tive country, for there can be no ſafety in *Europe*

'for

'for you, after you leave this place; your escape 'from whence, and every circumstance relating to 'your return, shall be his care. Nor will he de-'mand the reward his heart pants for, till your 'safety shall remove every fear, every doubt of his 'sincerity.'

'*O name the generous man!*'——'Behold him 'at your feet! Receive me for your son.'——— '*Thee! the inquisitor! who threatened me with 'torture!*'——'But treated thee with tenderness, 'treated *Iliffa* with respect.'——'*Make me know 'that!*'——'I ask no favour but on that con-'dition. If I procure liberty for you and your '*Iliffa*; if I restore you to your native land, and 'accompany you thither; if your *Iliffa* acknow-'ledges the services of my love, and asks your 'consent to reward them, will you confirm my 'bliss, and own me for your son?'——'*I 'will, and thank kind Heaven that gave me such a 'son.*'

Saying this, he embraced my master, who, in a few words, let him know the scheme he had formed for their escape, and then left him to his happy reflexions while he went to prosecute it.

In one of the cells of the Inquisition there was confined an *English* seaman, who had been seised and secretly conveyed thither for some dis-respectful expressions against the *divinity of Saint Dominick.*

The manly, modest resolution with which he had refused to own the authority of their tribunal, and his firmness under the first tortures, marked him out to the inquisitor as the person proper for his design; for he would not trust any one of his own country, not even his brother,

ther, whoſe treachery to *Pheron* he now abhorred.

As ſoon as he opened the door of his cell, the ſailor, whoſe ſoreneſs prevented his ſleeping very ſound, perceived him, and, imagining it was a ſummons to a repetition of the torture, he ſprang up as far as his chains would admit him, and cried, '*Hallo, who comes there?*'——The inquiſitor, advancing, anſwered, 'A friend.'——'*Aye! damn all ſuch friends* (replied the ſailor.) *I ſuppoſe you come to give me another toaſting; but if my hands were out of the bilboes, I'd ſend you off with a ſalt eel for your ſupper.*'——

'Moderate your rage a moment, my friend; I come to ſet you free, if you deſire, and will deſerve it.'——'*Avaſt hailing, brother! I do not underſtand you!*'——'Why, do not you deſire to be free?'——'*Deſire! Aye, that I do! But I may whiſtle for that wind long enough before it will blow.*'——'Perhaps not; perhaps that wind, as you ſay, is nearer blowing than you imagine. What would you do to be free?' '*Do! I'd burn the inquiſition, and cut the inquiſitor's throat! I'd do any thing but turn Papiſt, or fight againſt Old England.*'——'Honeſt Briton! But, ſuppoſe I ſhould ſet you free, would you ſerve me faithfully in one thing, that is neither againſt your country nor your religion?'——'*Belay that, and I'll warrant you, if I ſay it, I'll do it, without more words. I am no landſman, nor Portugueſe.*'——'Well, then, I'll take your word; and ſo come with me.'——The ſailor was ſo ſurpriſed, he ſcarce knew whether he was aſleep or awake; however, as ſoon as the inquiſitor had unlocked his

his chains, he ſhrugged his ſhoulders, and followed him, without more queſtions.

When they were come into my maſter's apartment, he made the ſailor ſit down, and giving him ſome wine to chear his ſpirits, 'You are now at 'liberty, my friend (ſaid he) without any fur-'ther condition, and may go where you pleaſe: 'but, if you will ſerve me in an affair I ſhall men-'tion to you, you ſhall have reaſon to think of 'this night with pleaſure as long as you live.'— 'Serve you, maſter! (replied the ſailor) that I 'will! name but what you would have me do; 'that is, as I ſaid before—you underſtand me— 'and I'll do it, though it was to hand the main-'top-gallant ſail, in a ſtorm, at midnight, when 'the yard was broke in the ſlings, and it was not 'my watch; for if it was a man's watch, do you 'ſee, it would be but his duty; and there is no 'merit in a man's doing his duty—I am no flincher. 'I never ſay aye when I mean no: though I ſay 'it, I am a gentleman; my father was a lieutenant 'of a man of war, and I have been at ſea theſe 'five and thirty years man and boy, and never 'was once brought to the gang-way in all that 'time. If the noble captain that rated me a mid-'ſhipman twenty years ago, had lived to be an ad-'miral, I ſhould have been an officer before now.'

The honeſt openneſs of heart that appeared in the ſailor's giving his own character made my maſter hear him with pleaſure, and place an entire confidence in him. As ſoon as he had finiſhed, therefore, he opened his ſcheme to him, and the ſailor undertook to go to *London*, buy a good ſhip, and freight her for *Alexandria*, and to call at *Liſbon* in his way, and to take my maſter and his friends

on board; to do which he gave him money and jewels to a great amount; the latter he was to diſpoſe of in *London*, and account with the inquiſitor for the ſurplus, after the purchaſe of the ſhip and cargo, which were to be his own, in reward for his trouble, as ſoon as he had made this voyage.

All things being thus ſettled, the ſailor was juſt departing, when, on a ſudden thought, he turned ſhort on the inquiſitor: 'Steady (ſaid 'he) ſteady; ſo far go right before the wind, 'and all's well. But whom do you mean to 'clap aboard me when I come? If it is the '*Pretender*, or the *French* king, here take back 'your *trinkums*; I'll be damned before I'll help 'either of them to make his eſcape.'——— 'Never fear, my friend,' (replied the inquiſitor, ſcarce able to contain his laughter at the ſtrangeneſs of ſuch a thought) 'I promiſe you it is nei-'ther of theſe; I promiſe you not to do any 'thing againſt your king or your religion.'—— 'But ſhall we not have one daſh at this dam-'ned place? (added the ſailor.) Shall we not 'ſet it on fire, and cut the inquiſitor's throat? 'I'll bring a gang of jolly boys that would ſhoot 'the gulf of hell, to have a ſtroke at *Devil* '*Dominick*; ſhall not we ſee the inquiſition on 'fire, and cut the inquiſitor's throat.'——'We 'will conſider about thoſe things: but you had 'better loſe no time; and let me once more 'caution you not to be ſeen in *Liſbon* at preſent, 'and to be as expeditious as poſſible in your 'return.'——'Never fear, maſter; never fear,' replied the ſailor, and ſhaking him heartily by the hand, away he went.

I here

I here quitted the ſervice of the inquiſitor, being among the money which he gave to the ſailor.

CHAP. XXIII.

The ſailor goes to LONDON, *buys a ſhip, and returns to* LISBON, *where he takes his paſſengers on board. His behaviour on meeting a* FRENCH *ſhip. He lands his paſſengers at* ALEXANDRIA, *returns home, and marries.* CHRYSAL *quits his ſervice.*

MY new maſter no ſooner found himſelf at liberty, than he haſted away to the ſea-ſide, without ever ſtopping to look behind him, and, luckily finding the packet juſt ready to ſail, he was out of ſight of *Liſbon* before morning.

Never was an heart ſo intent upon executing a commiſſion faithfully as his; he thought of nothing elſe all the paſſage, and the moment he arrived in *London* he ſold the jewels, bought a ſhip, manned her well, and, having laid in a proper cargo, ſet ſail for *Liſbon*, and was there before his employer imagined he was arrived in *London*.

I had been an idle ſpectator of theſe tranſactions, for young *Aminadab* had made ſuch depredations on me, that no one in *London* would accept me at my original value; and my maſter's honour would not think of parting with me for leſs, without acquainting the perſon from whom he had received me.——The moment he arrived

in *Liſbon*, he gave notice to his friend, whoſe joy at his fidelity and expedition is not to be expreſſed. He immediately had the treaſures, which he deſigned to take with him, conveyed ſecretly on board, and, as ſoon as the wind ſerved, embarked himſelf with his friends in the night, and obliged my maſter to ſail directly, though greatly to his diſſatisfaction, becauſe he would not conſent to his firing the priſon of the inquiſition, and *cutting the inquiſitor's throat.*

Heaven ſeemed to approve of the undertaking, ſending a fair wind, which ſoon carried us out of the ſear of our enemies.

It is impoſſible to conceive an happier company than were now together; nor did the blunt feſtivity of my maſter add a little to the pleaſure of the voyage, which met but one cloud, that ſeemed at firſt to threaten a good deal, but ſoon blew over.

When we were about half our voyage, my maſter entered the cabbin haſtily one morning, and, with a kind of fierce delight flaſhing in his eyes, ſays to the inquiſitor, whom he always called *owner*, 'Well, *owner*, you ſhall now ſee what *Engliſh* 'boys can do; there is a large *Frenchman* bearing 'down upon us, but, if you do not ſee him ſheer 'off as ſhort as if he had got foul of a lee ſhore, I 'will never take the helm again, if he is not even 'obliged to drop anchor to bring him up along 'ſide of us; and, as I expected ſome ſuch thing, 'I took a letter of marque, ſo that you need not 'fear being hanged for a pirate, if the worſt 'ſhould happen.'

But, delighted as my maſter was, his paſſengers did not ſeem ſo well pleaſed with the news, eſpecially

eſpecially his *owner*, who was not uſed to fighting, and beſide was too anxious for his eſcape with his fair prize, to think of any thing with pleaſure which could poſſibly deprive him of her.

They all went directly, therefore, upon the deck, and, ſeeing the ſhip really coming toward them, the inquiſitor went into the cabbin, that he ſhould not be obſerved by the men, and, ſending for my maſter, accoſted him thus: 'Surely, my friend, 'you cannot mean to wait for that ſhip,' (for we were *lying-to*) 'ſhe certainly means to attack you.' ——'And ſo let her, *owner*,' (replied my maſter) 'I'll warrant ſhe gets as good as ſhe brings.' ——'But, conſider, my friend;' (returned the inquiſitor) 'conſider we are on board you.' ——'*Well, owner, and what then; you are 'not afraid: the lady may be ſtowed ſafe below; 'and you'll ſtand as good a chance as another; you 'are not afraid.*'——'My good friend, I 'have not time now to explain my reaſons to 'you; but if you have any regard for me, you 'will inſtantly crowd all the ſail you can, and 'get clear of this affair—I deſire it—I beg it.' ——'*Why, look you, owner, what needs all theſe 'words? If ſo be you order us, we muſt put about, 'to be ſure, for the ſhip is your's; but then the 'honour of Old England, conſider that; the ho-'nour of Old England.*'——'O, my friend, I 'can conſider nothing but my deſire to avoid 'this danger; ſo once more I beg'——'*Enough 'ſaid, enough ſaid.*' Then going upon the deck, 'Well my lads, our owner does not chooſe this 'bruſh, while the lady is on board; ſo we muſt 'about ſhip: but, as we come back, *Soup-maigre* 'ſhall pay for it'——And, ſaying this, he obeyed the deſire of his owner as faithfully as if it had

been his own, only not with the ſame appearance of pleaſure, not being able to avoid ejaculating *damn fear*, at every turn of the tune he whiſtled as he walked the deck the reſt of that day.

He had ſo punctually obſerved his *owner*'s inſtructions in getting a good ſhip, that we were ſoon out of ſight of the *Frenchman*; nor did we meet with any thing diſagreeable during the remainder of the voyage.

The day after this affair, when they had all recovered their good-humour, my maſter addreſſed his *owner* thus:——'Now, *owner*, while the 'ſky is clear, and we have nothing elſe to do, 'I had better give you an account of your mo-'ney. Here is the log-book, which you may 'overhaul at your leiſure, though the ſooner 'the better. This is the time; there is no taking 'a good obſervation in a ſtorm, as may hap-'pen by and by; you'll find all as fair as a new 'cable: but I muſt give you one point to direct 'your reckoning by, and that is this; you bade 'me buy a ſhip and freight her, and ſo forth, 'and ſhe and the cargo ſhall be my own, after 'I had done your job this trip. Now, *owner*, 'it is very true that a leſs veſſel than this might 'have made the run; but then you ſeemed ſo 'deſirous to be ſafe, that I thought it beſt to take 'a bargain in this ſtout ſhip, which I knew to 'be as good a ſea-boat as ever turned to wind-'ward, and able to go, hank for hank, with 'any thing that ſwims the ſea, as we ſhowed 'when we run the *Frenchman* out of ſight yeſter-'day, though it went againſt my heart to do 'it; but no matter for that now; the ſhip is 'your's, and you have a right to be obeyed. 'However, there is the account, and here is the

'reſt of your money, of which I did not lay out 'a ſhilling that I could avoid, but one guinea, 'which I gave *Will Croſſtree*, to *repair his rig-* 'ging, and one I gave *Black Moll* of *Wapping*, to 'heave down; and I could not well avoid thoſe 'neither, for *Will* was an old meſs-mate, and I 'owed *Moll* for many a good turn in her way. 'But all this ſignifies nothing to you; they can 'be ſtopped in the account; and here is a damned 'guinea too, that would not go; I believe it 'has been in the hoſpital till it was *fluxed* off its 'legs.

'And now, *owner*, as you may think this 'ſhip coſt too much, and that the cargo is too 'good, I will not keep you to your bargain; 'ſhe is your own, and all that is in her, only 'pay the men; as for me, I am ſatisfied with 'having got out of that damned inquiſition, and 'leave the reſt to yourſelf. If you think that 'I have deſerved any thing, well and good; if 'not, I do not fear bread while the ſea flows 'round *Old England*; all that grieves me is, that 'you would not let us ſet fire to the inquiſition, 'and cut the inquiſitor's throat.'—If my maſter's bluntneſs, in the affair of the *French* ſhip, gave offenſe to his *owner*, the honeſty of this ſpeech reſtored him to his warmeſt eſteem; and made *Pheron*, who was preſent, cry out in a rapture, 'Thank Heaven, there is ſtill ſome honeſty among 'mankind.'——'Honeſty, aye (replied my 'maſter) a little among the tars of *Old England!* 'a little.'

The inquiſitor having, by this time, recovered from the aſtoniſhment into which ſuch noble-neſs of ſoul threw him, returned the account unopened,

unopened, with theſe words, 'I am convinced 'your account muſt be juſt; and I freely make 'you a gift, not of this ſhip and cargo, for 'they are juſtly your own already, but of the 'reſt of the money which is in your hands.'—— '*What, all, owner! all!*'——'All, my friend; 'if it were many times ſo much, you juſtly merit 'it.'——'*But then, owner, had you not better ſign 'the account, if you pleaſe, for fear of after-reckon-'ings with your executors; for I hate the law damn-'ably, ever ſince I loſt a year's pay for hindering 'our boatſwain's mate's brother to beat his wife. 'The brimſtone ſwore I beat her huſband, and ſo 'I paid for meddling; but it was the lawyer's fault 'that ſet her on. Damn all lawyers, ſay I.*'—— 'Well, then, my honeſt, worthy friend, there 'is a receipt; and I wiſh you ſucceſs equal to 'your merit; and you cannot have more.'—— '*Enough ſaid, owner, enough ſaid: I thank you; 'I thank you.*'

The remainder of our voyage was one continued ſcene of happineſs. My maſter landed his paſſengers at *Alexandria*, from whence they ſoon ſet out for *Pheron*'s country, and, at his taking leave of them, adviſed them to be careful how they ventured in any of the ſhips of thoſe countries, which, he aſſured them, were not better than *bumboats*, nor did their mariners know any more of the ſea than a *Thames* water-man.

Having finiſhed this his firſt buſineſs, he proceeded to diſpoſe of his cargo, for which he met ſo good a market, and made ſo profitable a return from thence home, that, as ſoon as he arrived, his landlady's daughter at *Goſport*, whom he had been in love with for many years, but never dared to ſpeak to till now, readily conſented to marry him.

him. One thing, though, I muſt not omit, and that was, that he kept a conſtant *look-out* all the voyage home, for that *Frenchman* whom he had fled from ſo ſore againſt his will; and was greatly concerned that he could not meet him, to have one bruſh for the honour of *Old England.*

I did not remain with him to be a witneſs of his happineſs; he gave me to a Jew pedlar for a pair of fine ſleeve buttons, to preſent to his miſtreſs the morning before his marriage.

CHAP. XXIV.

CHRYSAL *arrives in London, where he comes into the poſſeſſion of a pawn-broker, by whom he is given to the author. A moſt unhappy inſtance of human infirmity. The concluſion.*

THE diminution of my ſize, which had made my late maſter careleſs about me, did not prevent the pedlar, though with many apparent ſcruples, from giving him a great bargain, worth about a third part of my preſent value, for me.

I did not remain long in his poſſeſſion: he paſſed me off as ſoon as he arrived in *London*, whither he was going when he received me, to a pawn-broker, at a diviſion of the loſs, in the purchaſe of old clothes, which he was going to carry abroad.———Strange were the ſcenes, and unexpected the faces, which I ſaw in this place, where every neceſſary utenſil of life, every ornament of luxury, was depoſited, as in a place of

of ſecurity, by their reſpective owners: but your own experience makes any particular deſcription of this place, or its manifold myſterious trade, unneceſſary to you.

This misfortune of my ſize kept me a priſoner here till Saturday night, when my maſter always *puts off* his light coin, juſt before he ſhuts his ſhop, to the poor people, whoſe neceſſity requiring an immediate ſupply, for the ſupport of life, cannot wait to return it on Monday, and ſo muſt even bear the loſs.——Such a perſon did he think you, and accordingly gave *me* to you: but the moment I came into your poſſeſſion, and found that you were *the choſen of ten thouſand*, *the firſt-born of ſcience*, whom wiſdom had inſtructed, and art led by the hand, through the dark labyrinths of nature, till the coy fugitive, unable longer to elude your purſuit, had been obliged to conſent to a revelation of her moſt *occult wiſdom*, and to entruſt you with the command *of that chain* which links the animal and material worlds together; the moment, I ſay, that I perceived who you were, and that I was the *intelligence* appointed to convey this favour to you, I entered your heart with the greateſt pleaſure, and waited with impatience for the moment when I ſhould confer this completion of human happineſs and honour upon you; a pleaſure that was heightened by the noble conſtancy you ſhowed, when the ſmell of the hot ox-cheeks, as you came by the cook's ſhop, raiſed that conflict between nature and knowledge, whether you ſhould purchaſe ſome of it to ſatisfy your hunger, or preſerve me for this laſt experiment, in which the latter was ſo glorioufly triumphant.

The